



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

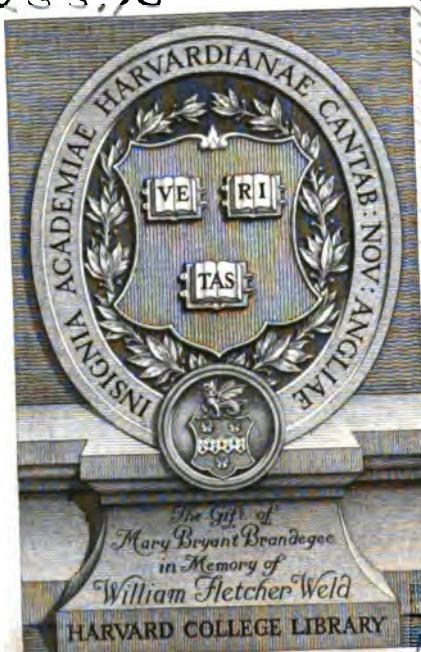
We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

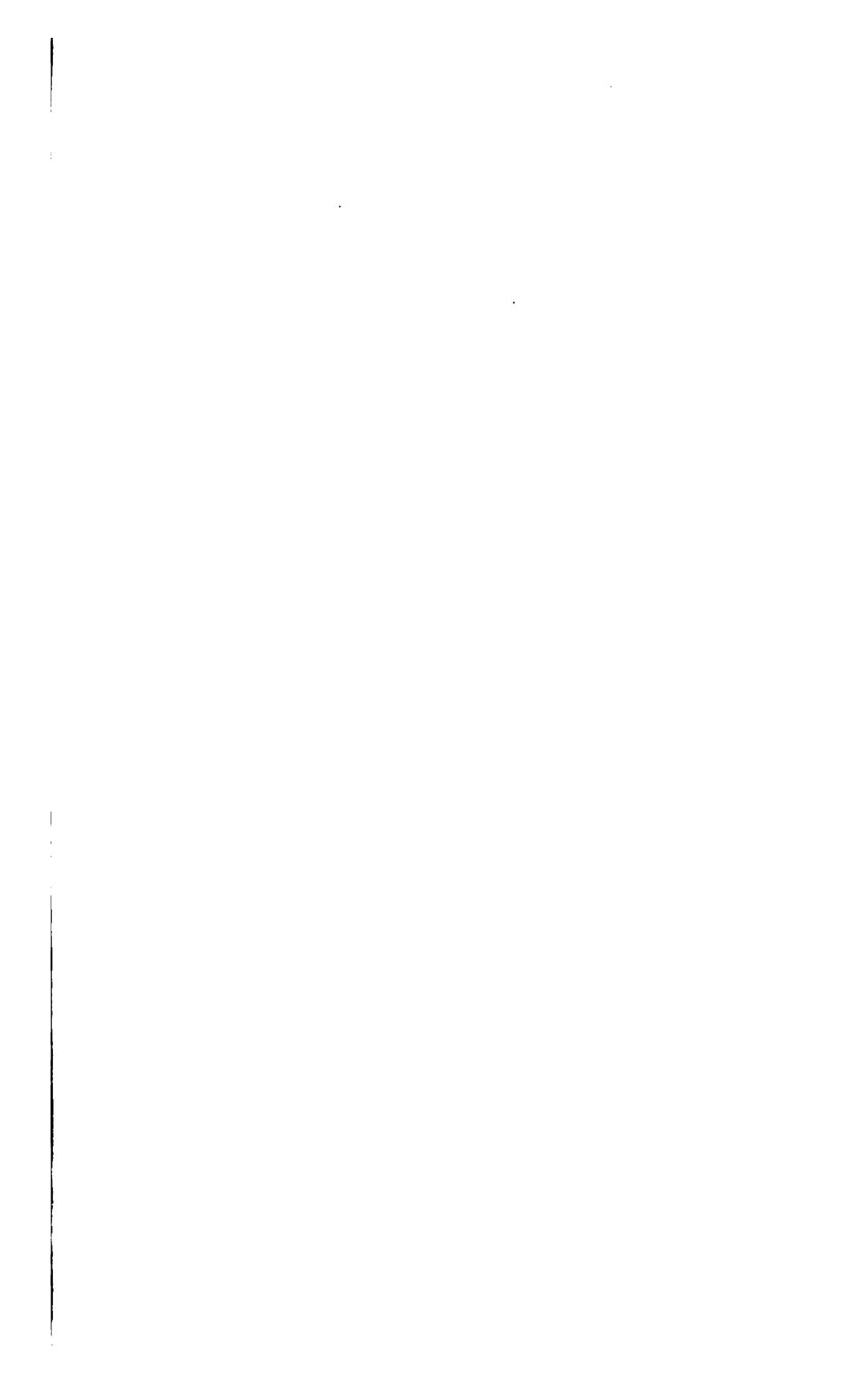
Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

1235.13



3 13







the first time in the history of the world, the
whole of the human race has been gathered
together in one place.

It is a great day for us all, and we should
all rejoice in it.



Drawn & Engraved by H^m Evans

James Harris Esq. D.

1760.

HERMES
OR
A PHILOSOPHICAL INQUIRY
CONCERNING
UNIVERSAL GRAMMAR
BY JAMES HARRIS ESQ.

ΕΙΣΕΙΔΑΙ ΟΡΓΟΝΩΤΑΣ ΕΙΝΑΙ ΤΑ ΚΑΙ ΕΝΤΑΤΟΑ ΘΕΟΤΖ.

THE SEVENTH EDITION.

LONDON :

PRINTED FOR J. COLLINGWOOD, STRAND.

1825.

1235.13

T. C. Hansard, Peter-noster-row Press.

TO
THE RIGHT HONOURABLE
PHILIP LORD HARDWICKE,
LORD HIGH CHANCELLOR OF GREAT BRITAIN.*

My Lord,

AS no one has exercised the Powers of Speech with juster and more universal applause, than yourself; I have presumed to inscribe the following Treatise to your Lordship, its End being to investigate the Principles of those Powers. It has a farther Claim to your Lordship's Patronage, by being connected in some degree with that politer Literature, which, in the most important scenes of Business, you have still found time to cultivate. With regard to

* The above Dedication is printed as it originally stood, the Author being desirous that what he intended as real Respect to the noble Lord, when living, should be considered as a Testimony of Gratitude to his Memory.

*myself, if what I have written be the fruits
of that Security and Leisure, obtained by
living under a mild and free Government ;
to whom for this am I more indebted, than
to your Lordship, whether I consider you as
a Legislator, or as a Magistrate, the first
both in dignity and reputation ? Permit
me therefore thus publicly to assure your
Lordship, that, with the greatest gratitude
and respect, I am, My Lord,*

Your Lordship's most obliged,

and most obedient humble Servant,

JAMES HARRIS.

*Close of Salisbury,
Oct. 1, 1751.*

P R E F A C E.

THE chief End proposed by the Author of this Treatise in making it public, has been to excite his Readers to curiosity and inquiry; not to teach them himself by prolix and formal Lectures (from the efficacy of which he has little expectation), but to induce them, if possible, to become Teachers to themselves, by an impartial use of their own understandings. He thinks nothing more absurd than the common notion of Instruction, as if Science were to be poured into the Mind, like water into a cistern, that passively waits to receive all that comes. The growth of Knowledge he rather thinks to resemble the growth of Fruit; however external causes may in some degree co-operate, it is the internal vigour, and virtue of the

tree, that must ripen the juices to their just maturity.

This then, namely, the exciting men to inquire for themselves into subjects worthy of their contemplation, this the Author declares to have been his first and principal motive for appearing in print. Next to that, as he has always been a lover of Letters, he would willingly approve his studies to the liberal and ingenuous. He has particularly named these, in distinction to others; because, as his studies were never prosecuted with the least regard to lucre, so they are no way calculated for any lucrative End. The liberal therefore and ingenuous (whom he has mentioned already) are those, to whose perusal he offers what he has written. Should they judge favourably of his attempt, he may not perhaps hesitate to confess,

Hoc jubar et melli est,.....

For tho' he hopes he cannot be charged with the foolish love of vain Praise, he has no desire to be thought indifferent, or insensible to honest Fame.

From the influence of these sentiments, he has endeavoured to treat his subject with as much order, correctness, and perspicuity as in his power; and if he has failed, he can safely say (according to the vulgar phrase) that the failure has been his misfortune, and not his fault. He scorns those trite and contemptible methods of anticipating pardon for a bad performance, that "it was the hasty fruits of a few idle hours; written merely for private amusement; never revised; published against consent, at the importunity of friends, copies (God knows how) having by stealth gotten abroad;" with other stale jargon of equal falsehood and inanity. May we not ask such Prefacers, *If what they allege be true, what*

has the world to do with them and their crudities.

As to the Book itself, it can say this in its behalf, that it does not merely confine itself to what its title promises, but expatiates freely into whatever is collateral ; aiming on every occasion to rise in its inquiries, and to pass, as far as possible, from small matters to the greatest. Nor is it formed merely upon sentiments that are now in fashion, or supported only by such authorities as are modern. Many Authors are quoted, that now-a-days are but little studied ; and some, perhaps, whose very names are hardly known.

The Fate indeed of antient Authors (as we have happened to mention them) is not unworthy of our notice. A few of them survive in the Libraries of the learned, where some venerable Folio, that still goes by their name, just suffices to give them a

kind of *nominal* existence. The rest have long fallen into a deeper obscurity, their very names, when mentioned, affecting us as little, as the names, when we read them, of those subordinate Heroes,

*Alcandrumque, Haliumque, Noemonaque,
Prytanimque.*

Now if an Author, not content with the more eminent of antient Writers, should venture to bring his reader into such company as these last, *among people* (in the fashionable phrase) *that nobody knows*, what usage, what quarter can he have reason to expect? Should the Author of these speculations have done this (and it is to be feared he has), what method had he best take in a circumstance so critical?— Let us suppose him to apologize in the best manner he can, and in consequence of this, to suggest as follows—

He hopes there will be found a pleasure

in the contemplation of antient sentiments, as the view of antient Architecture, tho' in ruins, has something venerable. Add to this, what from its antiquity is but little known, has from that very circumstance the recommendation of novelty; so that here, as in other instances, *Extremes may be said to meet.* Farther still, as the Authors, whom he has quoted, lived in various ages, and in distant countries; some in the full maturity of *Grecian* and *Roman* Literature; some in its declension; and others in periods still more barbarous and depraved; it may afford, perhaps, no unpleasing speculation, to see how the **SAME REASON** has at all times prevailed; how there is **ONE TRUTH**, like one Sun, that has enlightened human Intelligence through every age, and saved it from the darkness both of Sophistry and Error.

Nothing can more tend to enlarge the Mind, than these extensive views of Men,

and human Knowledge ; nothing can more effectually take us off from the foolish admiration of what is immediately before our eyes, and help us to a juster estimate both of present Men, and present Literature,

It is perhaps too much the case with the multitude in every nation, that as they know little beyond themselves, and their own affairs, so out of this narrow sphere of knowledge, they think nothing worth knowing. As we BAITONS by our situation live divided from the whole world, this perhaps will be found to be more remarkably our case. And hence the reason, that our studies are usually satisfied in the works of our own Countrymen ; that in Philosophy, in Poetry, in every kind of subject, whether serious or ludicrous, whether sacred or profane, we think perfection with ourselves, and that it is superfluous to search farther.

The Author of this Treatise would by no means detract from the just honours due to those of his Countrymen, who either in the present, or preceding age, have so illustriously adorned it. But tho' he can with pleasure and sincerity join in celebrating their deserts, he would not have the admiration of these, or of any other few, to pass thro' blind excess into a contempt of all others. Were such admiration to become universal, an odd event would follow ; a few learned men, without any fault of their own, would contribute in a manner to the extinction of Letters.

A like evil to that of admiring only the authors of our own age, is that of admiring only the authors of one particular Science. There is indeed in this last prejudice something peculiarly unfortunate, and that is, the more excellent the Science, the more likely it will be found to produce this effect.

There are few Sciences more intrinsically valuable, than MATHEMATICS. It is hard indeed to say, to which they have more contributed, whether to the Utilities of Life, or to the sublimest parts of Science. They are the noblest Praxis of LOGIC or UNIVERSAL REASONING. It is thro' *them* we may perceive, how the stated Forms of Syllogism are exemplified in one Subject, namely, the Predicament of *Quantity*. By marking the force of these Forms, as they are applied *here*, we may be enabled to apply them of ourselves *elsewhere*. Nay, farther still—by viewing the MIND, *during its process in these syllogistic employments*, we may come to know in part, *what kind of Being it is*; since MIND, like other Powers, can be only known from its *Operations*. Whoever therefore will study *Mathematics* in this view, will become not only by Mathematics a more expert *Logician*, and by

Logic a more rational *Mathematician*, but a wiser Philosopher, and an acuter Reasoner, in all the possible subjects either of science or deliberation.

But when *Mathematics*, instead of being applied to this excellent purpose, are used not to exemplify *Logic*, but to supply its place; no wonder if *Logic* pass into contempt, and if *Mathematics*, instead of furthering science, become in fact an obstacle. For when men, knowing nothing of that Reasoning which is *universal*, come to attach themselves for years to a single *Species*, a species wholly involved in *Lines and Numbers only*; they grow insensibly to believe these last as inseparable from all Reasoning, as the poor *Indians* thought every horseman to be inseparable from his horse.

And thus we see the use, nay, the

necessity of enlarging our literary views, lest even *Knowledge itself* should obstruct its own growth, and perform in some measure the part of ignorance and barbarity.

Such, then, is the Apology made by the Author of this Treatise, for the multiplicity of antient quotations, with which he has filled his Book. If he can excite in his readers a proper spirit of curiosity ; if he can help in the least degree to enlarge the bounds of Science ; to revive the decaying taste of antient Literature ; to lessen the bigotted contempt of every thing not modern ; and to assert to Authors of every age their just portion of esteem ; if he can in the least degree contribute to these ends, he hopes it may be allowed, that he has done a service to mankind. Should this service be a reason for his Work to survive, he has confess already, it would be no unpleasing event. Should

the contrary happen, he must acquiesce in his fate, and let it peaceably pass to those destined regions, whither the productions of modern Wit are every day passing,

—*in vicum vendentem thus et odores.*

ADVERTISEMENT.

The Reader is desired to take notice, that as often as the author quotes V. I. p. &c. he refers to Three Treatises published first in one Volume, Octavo, in the year 1745.

CONTENTS.

BOOK I.

CHAPTER I.

	PAGE
<i>Introduction. Design of the whole</i>	1

CHAP. II.

<i>Concerning the Analyzing of Speech into its smallest Parts</i>	9
---	---

CHAP. III.

<i>Concerning the several Species of those smallest Parts</i>	23
---	----

CHAP. IV.

<i>Concerning Substantives, properly so called</i>	37
--	----

CHAP. V.

<i>Concerning Substantives of the Secondary Order</i>	63
---	----

C H A P. VI.

	P A G E
<i>Concerning Attributives, and first concerning Verbs</i>	87

C H A P. VII.

<i>Concerning Time and Tenses</i>	100
---	-----

C H A P. VIII.

<i>Concerning Modes</i>	140
-----------------------------------	-----

C H A P. IX.

<i>Concerning Verbs, as to their Species and other remaining Properties</i>	173
---	-----

C H A P. X.

<i>Concerning Particles and Adjectives</i>	184
--	-----

C H A P. XI.

<i>Concerning Attributives of the Secondary Order</i>	19
---	----

B O O K . II.

C H A P T E R I.

<i>Concerning Definitives</i>	213
---	-----

C O N T E N T S.

xix

C H A P. II.

	P A G E
<i>Concerning Connectives, and first those called Conjunctions</i>	237

C H A P. III.

<i>Concerning those other Connectives, called Prepositions</i>	261
--	-----

C H A P. IV.

<i>Concerning Cases</i>	275
-----------------------------------	-----

C H A P. V.

<i>Concerning Interjections—Recapitulation— Conclusion</i>	289
--	-----

BOOK III.

CHAPTER I.

<i>Introduction—Division of the Subject into its principal Parts</i>	305
--	-----

C H A P. II.

<i>Upon the Matter or common Subject of Language</i>	316
--	-----

CHAP. III.

	PAGE
<i>Upon the Form, or peculiar Character of Language</i>	328

CHAP. IV.

<i>Concerning general or universal Ideas</i> ..	350
---	-----

CHAP. V.

<i>Subordination of Intelligence—Difference of Ideas, both in particular Men, and in whole Nations—Different Genius of different Languages—Character of the English—the Oriental, the Latin, and the Greek Languages—Superlative Excellence of the Last—Conclusion</i> ..	403
---	-----

HERMES
OR
A PHILOSOPHICAL INQUIRY
CONCERNING
UNIVERSAL GRAMMAR.

BOOK I.

CHAP. I.

INTRODUCTION.

Design of the Whole.

IF Men by nature had been framed for Solitude, they had never felt an Impulse to converse one with another: And if, like lower Animals, they had been by nature irrational, they could not have recognized the proper subjects of Discourse. Since SPEECH, then, is the joint Energy of our best and noblest Faculties,^(a) (that is to say, of our *Reason* and our *social Affection*) being

^(a) See V. I. p. 147 to 169. See also Note xv. p. 292, and Note xix. p. 296, of the same Volume

withal our *peculiar* Ornament and Distinction, as *Men*; those Inquiries may surely be deemed interesting as well as liberal, which either search how SPEECH may be naturally *resolved*; or how, when resolved, it may be again *combined*.

HERE a large field for speculating opens before us. We may either behold SPEECH, as divided into its *constituent Parts*, as a Statue may be divided into its several limbs; or else, as resolved into its *Matter* and *Form*, as the same Statue may be resolved into its Marble and Figure.

THESE different *Analysings* or *Resolutions* constitute what we call^(b) PHILOSOPHICAL, OR UNIVERSAL GRAMMAR.

^(b) Grammaticam etiam bipartitam ponemus, ut alia sit literaria, alia philosophica, &c. Bacon, de Augm. Scient. VI. 1. And soon after he adds—Verumtamen hæc ipsa re monili, cogitatione complexi sumus Grammaticam quendam, quæ non analogiam verborum ad invicem, sed analogiam inter verba et res sive rationem sedulo inquirat.

WHEN we have viewed SPEECH thus analysed, we may then consider it as compounded. And here, in the first place, we may contemplate that ^(c) *Synthesis* which by combining simple Terms produces a Truth ; then by combining two Truths produces a third ; and thus others, and others, in continued Demonstration, till we are led, as by a road, into the regions of SCIENCE.

Now this is that superior and most excellent *Synthesis*, which alone applies itself to our *Intellect* or *Reason*, and which to

^(c) Aristotle says—τῶν δὲ κατὰ μηδεμίαν συμπλοκὴν λεγομένων ἔδει ἔτει ἀληθὲς ἔτει ψευδές ἐτειν· οἷον ἄνθρωπος λεῦκος, τρέχει, νικᾷ—Of those words which are spoken without connexion, there is no one either true or false ; as for instance, *Man, white, runneth, conquereth*. Cat. C. 4. So again in the beginning of his Treatise *De Interpretatione*, περὶ γὰρ σύνθεσιν καὶ διάίρεσιν ἔτι τὸ ψευδός τε ἢ τὸ ἀληθές. *True and False are seen in Composition and Division.* Composition makes affirmative Truth, Division makes negative, yet both alike bring terms together, and so far therefore may be called synthetical.

conduct according to Rule, constitutes the Art of Logic.

AFTER this we may turn to those “*inferior* Compositions, which are productive of the *Pathetic*, and the *Pleasant*,

(⁵) *Ammonius* in his Comment on the Treatise Περὶ Ερμηνείας, p. 53, gives the following extract from *Theophrastus*, which is here inserted at length, as well for the Excellency of the Matter, as because it is not (I believe) elsewhere extant.

Διττῆς γὰρ ὅσης τῷ λόγῳ σχέσεως (καθ' ἀ διώρισεν δ φιλόσοφος Θεόφραστος), τῆς τε ΠΡΟΣ ΤΟΥΣ ΑΚΡΟΜΕΝΟΥΣ, οἵς ἐ σημαίνει τι, ἢ τῆς ΠΡΟΣ ΤΑ ΠΡΑΓΜΑΤΑ, ὑπὲρ ὃν δέ λέγων πεῖσαι προτίθηται τὸς ἀκροωμένες· περὶ μὲν ἐν τὴν σχέσιν αὐτῆς τὴν ΠΡΟΣ ΤΟΥΣ ΑΚΡΟΑΤΑΣ καταγίνονται ποιητικὴ ἢ ρητορικὴ διότι ἔργουν αὐταῖς ἐκλέγεσθαι τὰ σεμνότερα τῶν ὄνομάτων, ἀλλὰ μὴ τὰ κοινὰ ἢ δεδημευμένα, ἢ ταῦτα ἐναρμονίως συμπλέκειν ἀλλίλοις, ὡς διὰ τέτων ἢ τῶν τέτοις ἐπομένων, οἷον σαφηνείας, γλυκύτητος, ἢ τῶν ἀλλων ἰδεῶν, ἵτι τε μακρολογίας, ἢ βραχυλογίας, κατὰ καιρὸν πάντων παραλαμβανομένων, οἷσαί τε τὸν ἀκροατὴν, ἢ ἐκπλῆξαι, ἢ πρὸς τὴν πείθω χειρωθέντα ἔχειν τῆς δέ γε ΠΡΟΣ ΤΑ ΠΡΑΓΜΑΤΑ τῷ λόγῳ σχέσεως δ φιλόσοφος προτιθεμένως ἴπιμελήσεται, τό, τε ψεῦδος διελέγχων ὃ τὸ ἀληθὲς ἀποδεικνύει. *The Relation of Speech being twofold (as the Philosopher Theophrastus hath settled it) one to the HEARERS to whom*

in all their kinds. These latter Compositions aspire not to the Intellect, but being, addressed to the *Imagination*, the *Affections*, and the *Sense*, become, from their differ-

it explains something, and one to the THINGS, concerning which the Speaker proposes to persuade his Hearers: With respect to the first Relation, that which regards the HEARERS are employed Poetry and Rhetoric. Thus it becomes the business of these two, to select the most respectable Words, and not those that are common and of vulgar use, and to connect such Words harmoniously one with another, so as through these things and their consequences, such as Perspicuity, Delicacy, and the other Forms of Eloquence, together with Copiousness and Brevity, all employed in their proper season, to lead the Hearer, and strike him and hold him vanquished by the power of Persuasion. On the contrary, as to the Relation of Speech to THINGS, here the Philosopher will be found to have a principal employ, as well in refuting the False, as in demonstrating the True.

Sanctius speaks elegantly on the same subject. *Creavit Deus hominem rationis partipem; cui, quia Sociabilem esse voluit, magno pro munere dedit Sermonem.—Sermoni autem perficiendo tres opifices adhibuit. Prima est Grammatica, qua ab oratione solacismos et barbarismos expellit; secunda Dialectica, qua in Sermonis veritate versatur; tertia Rhetorica qua ornatum Sermonis tantum exquirit. M. in l. 1. c. 2.*

ent heightenings, either RHETORIC or POETRY.

NOR need we necessarily view these Arts distinctly and apart; we may observe, if we please, how perfectly they co-incide. GRAMMAR is equally requisite to every one of the rest. And though LOGIC may indeed subsist without RHETORIC or POETRY, yet so necessary to these last is a sound and correct LOGIC, that without it, they are no better than warbling Trifles.

Now all these inquiries (as we have said already) and such others arising from them as are of still sublimer Contemplation, (of which in the Sequel there may be possibly not a few) may with justice be deemed Inquiries both interesting and liberal.

At present we shall postpone the whole synthetical Part (that is to say *Logic* and

Rhetoric), and confine ourselves to the analytical, that is to say, **UNIVERSAL GRAMMAR**. In this we shall follow the Order, that we have above laid down, first dividing **SPEECH**, as a **WHOLE**, into its **CONSTITUENT PARTS**; then resolving it, as a **COMPOSITE**, into its **MATTER** and **FORM**; two Methods of Analysis very different in their kind, and which lead to a variety of very different Speculations.

SHOULD any one object, that in the course of our Inquiry we sometimes descend to things which appear trivial and low; let him look upon the effects, to which those things contribute, then from the Dignity of the Consequences, let him honour the Principles.

THE following Story may not improperly be here inserted. “ When the Fame of *Heraclitus* was celebrated throughout Greece, there were certain Persons, that

“ had a curiosity to see so great a man.
“ They came, and, as it happened, found
“ him warming himself in a Kitchen. The
“ meanness of the place occasioned them to
“ stop; upon which the Philosopher thus
“ accosted them—ENTER (says he), BOLD-
“ LY, FOR HERE TOO THERE ARE GODS.””

We shall only add, that as there is no part of Nature too mean for the Divine Presence; so there is no kind of Subject, having its foundation in Nature, that is below the Dignity of a philosophical Inquiry.

(^a) See *Aristot. de Part. Animal.* l. 1. c. 5.

CHAP. II.

Concerning the Analysing of Speech into its smallest Parts.

THOSE things which are *first to Nature* are not *first to Man*. *Nature* begins from *Causes*, and thence descends to *Effects*. *Human Perceptions* first open upon *Effects* and thence by slow degrees ascend to *Causes*. Often had mankind seen the Sun in Eclipse, before they knew its Cause to be the Moon's Interposition ; much oftener had they seen those unceasing Revolutions of Summer and Winter, of Day and Night, before they knew the Cause to be the Earth's double Motion.^(*) Even

^(*)This Distinction of *first to Man*, and *first to Nature*, was greatly regarded in the Peripatetic Philosophy.—See *Arist. Phys. Anacult.* l. 1. c. 1. *Themistius's Comment on the same, Poster. Analyt.* l. 1. c. 2. *De Anima*,

in Matters of Art and *human Creation*, if we except a few Artists and critical Ob-

l. 2. c. 2. It leads us, when properly regarded, to a very important Distinction between Intelligence *Divine* and Intelligence *Human*. God may be said to view the First as first; and the Last as last; that is, he views *Effects* through *Causes* in their *natural Order*. MAN views the Last, as first; and the First, as last; that is, he views *Causes* through *Effects*, in an *inverse Order*, and hence the Meaning of that passage in *Aristotle*; ὥσπερ γὰρ τὰ -ῶν νυκτερίδων ὅμιλα πρὸς τὸ φέγγος ἔχει τὸ μεθ' ἡμέραν, οἷς τῆς ἡμιέρας ψυχῆς ὁ Νός πρὸς τὰ τῆ φύσει φανερώτατα πάντων. *As are the Eyes of Bats to the Light of the Day, so is Man's Intelligence to those Objects, that are by Nature the brightest and most conspicuous of all things.*

Metaph. l. 2. c. 1. See also l. 7. c. 4. and *Ethic. Nicom.*

l. 1. c. 4. Ammonius, reasoning in the same way, says very pertinently to the subject of this Treatise—'Αγαπη-τὸν τῷ ἀνθρωπίνῃ φύσει, ἐκ τῶν ἀτελετέρων ἢ συνθέτων ἐν τὰ ἀπλότερα ἢ τελειότερα προϊέναι τὰ γὰρ σύνθετα μᾶλλον συνήθη ἡμῖν, ἢ γνωριμώτερα· "Οὐτω γέν εἰ τὸ παῖς εἶραι μὲν λόγον, ἢ εἰπεῖν, Σωκράτης περιπατεῖ, οἴδε· τέτοιον δὲ ἀναλύσαι εἰς δύνομα ἢ ρῆμα, ἢ ταῦτα εἰς συλλαβὰς, κακέντα εἰς ποιχεία, ἐκέτι" Human Nature may be well contented to advance from the more imperfect and complex to the more simple and perfect; for the complex Subjects are more familiar to us, and better known. Thus, therefore, it is, that even a Child knows how to put a sentence together, and say, Socrates walketh; but how to resolve this Sentence into a

servers, the rest look no higher than to the *Practice* and mere *Work*, knowing nothing of those *Principles* on which the whole depends.

Thus in SPEECH for example—All men, even the lowest, can speak their Mother-Tongue. Yet how many of this multitude can neither write, nor even read? How many of those, who are thus far literate, know nothing of that Grammar, which respects the Genius of their own language? How few, then, must be those, who know GRAMMAR UNIVERSAL; that Grammar which without regarding the several Idioms of particular Languages, *only respects those Principles that are essential to them all?*

Tis our present Design to inquire about this Grammar; in doing which we

Noun and Verb, and these again into Syllables, and Syllables into Letters or Elements, here he is at a loss. Am. in Com. de Prædic. p. 29.

shall follow the Order consonant to *human Perception*, as being for that reason the more easy to be understood.

We shall begin therefore first from a *Period* or *Sentence*, that combination in Speech, which is obvious to all; and thence pass, if possible, to those its *primary Parts*, which, however essential, are only obvious to a few.

WITH respect, therefore, to the different Species of Sentences, who is there so ignorant, as if we address him in his Mother Tongue, not to know when 'tis we *assert*, and when we *question*; when 'tis we *command*, and when we *pray* or *wish*?

FOR example, when we read in *Shakespeare**,

*The Man that hath no music in himself,
And is not moved with concord of sweet sounds,
Is fit for Treasons——*

* Merchant of Venice.

Or in *Milton*,*

*O Friends, I hear the tread of nimble feet
Hasting this way—*

'tis obvious that these are *assertive Sentences*, one founded upon Judgment, the other upon Sensation.

WHEN the Witch in *Macbeth* says to her Companions,

*When shall we three meet again,
In thunder, lightning, and in rain?*

this, 'tis evident, is an *interrogative Sentence*.

WHEN *Macbeth* says to the Ghost of *Banquo*,

*—Hence, horrible Shadow,
Unreal Mock'ry, hence!—*

he speaks an *imperative Sentence*, founded upon the passion of hatred.

WHEN Milton says in the character of his *Allegro*,

*Haste thee, Nymph, and bring with thee
Jest and youthful Jollity.*

he too speaks an *imperative Sentence*, though founded on the passion, not of hatred but of love.

WHEN in the beginning of the *Paradise Lost* we read the following address,

*And chiefly thou, O Spirit, that dost prefer
Before all temples th' upright heart, and pure,
Instruct me, for thou know'st—*

this is not to be called an *imperative Sentence*, though perhaps it bear the same Form, but rather (if I may use the Word) 'tis a Sentence *precative* or *optative*.

WHAT then shall we say? Are Sentences to be quoted in this manner without ceasing, all differing from each other in their stamp and character? Are they no way reducible to certain definite Classes?

If not, they can be no objects of *rational* comprehension.—Let us however try.

'Tis a phrase often applied to a man, when speaking, that *he speaks his MIND*; as much as to say, that his Speech or Discourse is *a publishing of some Energy or Motion of his Soul*. So it indeed is in every one that speaks, excepting alone the Dissembler or Hypocrite; and he, too, as far as possible, affects the appearance.

Now the **POWERS OF THE SOUL** (over and above the mere * nutritive) may be included all of them in those of **PERCEPTION**, and those of **VOLITION**. By the Powers of **PERCEPTION**, I mean the *Senses* and the *Intellect*; by the Powers of **VOLITION**, I mean, in an extended sense, not only the *Will* but the several *Passions* and

* Vid. Aristot. de An. II. 4.

Appetites ; in short, all that moves to action whether rational or irrational.

IF, then, the leading Powers of the Soul be these two, 'tis plain that every Speech or Sentence, as far as it exhibits the Soul, must, of course, respect one or other of these.

IF we *assert*, then it is a Sentence which respects the Powers of PERCEPTION. For what indeed is to *assert*, if we consider the examples above alleged, but to *publish some Perception either of the Senses or the Intellect ?*

AGAIN, if we *interrogate*, if we *command*, if we *pray*, or if we *wish* (which in terms of Art is to speak Sentences *interrogative, imperative, precative, or optative*) what do we but publish so many different VOLITIONS ?—For who is it that *questions*? He that has a *Desire* to be informed.—Who is

it that *commands*? He that has a *Will*, which he would have obeyed.—What are those Beings, who either *wish* or *pray*? Those, who feel certain wants either for themselves, or others.

IF then the *Soul's leading Powers* be the two above mentioned, and if it be true that *all Speech is a publication of these Powers*, it will follow that **EVERY SENTENCE WILL BE EITHER A SENTENCE OF ASSERTION, OR A SENTENCE OF VOLITION.** And thus by referring all of them to one of these two classes, have we found an expedient to reduce their infinitude.

⁽⁹⁾ Ρητέον δύι ὅπι τῆς ψυχῆς τῆς ἡμετέρας δίττας ἔχεσθαι δυνάμεις, τὰς μὲν γνωτικὰς, τὰς δὲ ζωτικὰς, τὰς δὲ ὑρειτικὰς λεγομένας (λέγω δὲ γνωτικὰς μὲν, καθ' ἃς γινώσκομεν ἔκαστον τῶν δυτῶν, οἷον νῦν, διάνοιαν; δόξαν; φαινασθαίνειν αἰσθησιν δρεκτικὰς δὲ, καθ' ἃς ὀρεγόμεθα τῶν ἀγαθῶν, ή τῶν δυτῶν, ή τῶν δοκεντῶν, οἷον βέλησιν λέγω, προαίρεσιν, δυμὸν, ή ἐπιθυμίαν) τὰ MEN τέτταρα εἶδον τῷ λόγῳ (τὰ παρὰ τὸν ἀποφαντικὸν) ἀπὸ αὐτῶν δρεκτικῶν δυνάμεων προέρχονται τῆς ψυχῆς, ὃς αὐτῆς καθ' αὐτὴν

The Extensions of Speech are quite indefinite, as may be seen if we compare

ἐνεργέστης, ἀλλὰ πρὸς ἔτερον ἀποτεινομένης (τὸν συμβάλλεσθαι δοκέντα πρὸς τὸ τυχεῖν τῆς ὁρέξεως) ηγοι λόγου παρὰ αὐτῷ ζητόσης, καθάπερ ἐπὶ τῷ ΠΥΣΜΑΤΙΚΟΥ ἢ ΕΡΩΤΗΜΑΤΙΚΟΥ καλωμένῳ λόγῳ, η πρᾶγμα, η εἰ πρᾶγμα, ηποι αὐτῷ ἐκείνῳ τυχεῖν ἐφιεμένης, πρὸς δὲ ὁ λόγος, ὥσπερ ἐπὶ τῷ ΚΛΗΤΙΚΟΥ, η τινὸς παρὰ αὐτῷ πράξεως ἢ ταῦτης, η ὡς παρὰ κρείττονος, ὡς ἐπὶ τῆς ΕΥΧΗΣ, η ὡς παρὰ χείρονος, ὡς ἐπὶ τῷ κυρίῳ καλωμένης ΠΡΟΣΤΑΞΕΩΣ· μόνον ΔΕ τὸ ΑΠΟΦΑΝΤΙΚΟΝ ἀπὸ τῶν γνωσικῶν, ἢ ἔσι τῷτο ἔξαγγελτικὸν τῆς γενομένης ἐν ἡμῖν γνώσεως τῶν πραγμάτων ἀληθῶς, η φαινομένως, διὸ ἢ μόνον τῷτο δεκτικόν ἔτιν ἀληθεῖας η ψεύδεις, τῶν δὲ ἄλλων ἀδέν. The Meaning of the above passage being implied in the Text, we take its translation from the *Latin Interpreter*.

Dicendum igitur est, cum anima nostra duplē potestatem habeat, cognitionis, et vīta, quā etiam appetūtionis ac cupiditatis appellatur, quā vero cognitionis est, vis est, quā res singulas cognoscimus, ut mens, cogitatio, opinio, phantasia, sensus: appetūtus vero facultas est, quā bona, vel quā mali, vel quāe videntur, concupiscimus, ut sunt voluntas, consilium, ira, cupiditas: quatuor orationis species, præter enunciacionem, a partibus animi proficiuntur, quāe concupiscenti; non cum animus ipse per se agit, sed cum ad alium se convertit, qui ei ad consequendum id, quod cupit, conducere posse videatur; atque etiam vel rationem ab eo exquirit, ut in oratione, quam Percunctantem aut Interrogantem vocant; vel rem: siquē rem, vel cum ipsum consequi cupit, quācum

the *Aeneid* to an Epigram of *Martial*. But the *longest Extension*, with which Grammar has to do, is the Extension here considered, that is to say, a **SENTENCE**. The greater Extensions (such as Syllogisms, Paragraphs, Sections, and complete Works) belong not to Grammar, but to Arts of higher order; not to mention that all of them are but sentences repeated.

Now a **SENTENCE**^(c) may be sketched in the following description—a compound *Quantity of Sound significant*, of

loquitur, ut in optante oratione, vel aliquam ejus actionem: atque in hac, vel ut a præstantiore, ut in Deprecatione; vel ut ab inferiore, ut in eo, qui proprie Jussus nominatur. Sola autem Enunciatio a cognoscendi facultate proficietur: haec nunciat rerum cognitioem, qua in nobis est aut veram, aut simulatam. Itaque Hec sola verum falsumque capit: præterea vero nulla. Ammoni in Libr. de Interpretatione.

^(c) Λόγος δὲ φωνὴ συνθετὴ σημαντική, ἡς ἔντια πέρι καθ' αὐτὰ σημαίνει τι. Arist. Poet. c. 20. See also de Interpret. c. 4.

which certain Parts are themselves also significant.

THUS when I say [*the Sun shineth*] not only the *whole quantity* of sound has a meaning, but *certain parts* also, such as [*Sun*] and [*shineth*].

BUT what shall we say? Have these Parts again other Parts, which are in like manner significant, and so may the progress be pursued to infinite? Can we suppose all Meaning, like Body, to be divisible, and to include within itself other meanings without end? If this be absurd, then must we necessarily admit, that there is such a thing as *a Sound significant, of which no Part is of itself significant*. And this is what we call the proper character of a ⁽⁴⁾WORD.

⁽⁴⁾ Φωνὴ σημαντικὴ.—ἥς μέρος ὁδέν εἰς καθ' αὐτὸν σημαντικόν. De Poetic. c. 20. De Interpret. c. 2 & 3.
Priscian's Definition of a Word (Lib. 2.) is as follows—

For thus, though the Words [*Sun*] and [*shineth*] have each a Meaning, yet is there certainly no Meaning in any of their Parts, neither in the Syllables of the one, nor in the Letters of the other.

If therefore ALL SPEECH, whether in prose or verse, every Whole, every Section, every Paragraph, every Sentence, imply a certain *Meaning*, divisible into other *Meanings*, but WORDS imply a *Meaning*, which is not so divisible : it follows that WORDS will be the smallest parts of Speech, in as much as nothing less has any Meaning at all.

Dictio est pars minima orationis constructæ, id est, in ordine composite. Pars autem, quantum ad totum intelligendum, id est, ad totius sensus intellectum. Hoc autem ideo dictum est, ne quis conetur vires in duas partes dividere, hoc est, in vi et res ; non enim ad totum intelligendum hæc sit divisio. To Priscian we may add Theodore Gaza.—Αἴτιος δὲ, μέρος ἐλάχιστον κατὰ σύνταξιν λόγος, Introd. Gram. l. 4. Plato shewed them this characteristic of a Word—See *Cratylus*, p. 385. Edit. Serr.

To know therefore the species of Words,
must needs contribute to the knowledge of
Speech, as it implies a knowledge of its
minutest Parts.

THIS therefore must become our next
Inquiry.

CHAP. III.

*Concerning the Species of Words, the
smallest Parts of Speech.*

LET us first search for the *Species* of Words among those Parts of Speech, commonly received by Grammarians. For Example in one of the passages above cited—

*The Man that hath no music in himself,
And is not mov'd with concord of sweet sounds,
Is fit for treasons—*

Here the Word [*The*] is an ARTICLE;— [*Man*] [*No*] [*Music*] [*Concord*] [*Sweet*] [*Sounds*] [*Fit*] [*Treasons*] are all NOUNS, some *Substantive*, and some *Adjective*— [*That*] and [*Himself*] are PRONOUNS— [*Hath*] and [*Is*] are VERBS— [*Mov'd*] a PARTICIPLE— [*Not*] an ADVERB— [*And*] a CONJUNCTION— [*In*] [*With*] and [*For*]

are PREPOSITIONS. In one sentence we have all those parts of Speech, which the *Greek* Grammarians are found to acknowledge. The *Latins* only differ in having no Article, and in separating the INTERJECTION, as a Part of itself, which the *Greeks* include among the Species of *Adverbs*.

WHAT then shall we determine? why are there not more Species of Words? why so many? or if neither more nor fewer, why these and not others?

To resolve, if possible, these several Queries, let us examine any Sentence that comes in our way, and see what differences we can discover in its Parts. For example the same Sentence above,

The Man that hath no music, &c.

ONE Difference soon occurs, that some Words are *variable*, and others *invariable*. Thus the Word *Man* may be varied into *Man's* and *Men*: *Hath*, into *Have*, *Hast*,

Had, &c. *Sweet* into *Sweeter* and *Sweetest*; *Fit* into *Fitter* and *Fittest*. On the contrary, the Words *The*, *In*, *And*, and some others, remain as they are, and *cannot be altered*.

AND yet it may be questioned, how far this Difference is essential. For in the first place, there are Variations, which can be hardly called necessary, because only some Languages have them, and others have them not. Thus the *Greeks* have the *dual* Variation, which is unknown both to the Moderns, and to the ancient *Latins*. Thus the *Greeks* and *Latins* vary their Adjectives by the *triple Variation* of Gender, Case, and Number; whereas the *English* never vary them in any of those ways, but through all kinds of Concord preserve them still the same. Nay even those very Variations, which appear most necessary, may have their places supplied by other methods; some by *Auxiliars* as when for *Bruti* or

Bruno we say, of Brutus, to Brutus ; some, by mere Position, as when for Brutum amavit Cassius, we say, Cassius loved Brutus. For here the *Accusative*, which in *Latin* is known *any where* from its *Variation*, is in *English* only known from its *Position* or place.

If then the Distinction of Variable and Invariable will not answer our purpose, let us look farther for some other more essential.

SUPPOSE then we should dissolve the Sentence above cited, and view its several *Parts* as they stand *separate* and detached. Some, 'tis plain, *still preserve a Meaning* (such as *Man, Music, Sweet, &c.*) others on the contrary *immediately lose it* (such as, *And, The, With, &c.*). Not that these last have no meaning at all, but in fact they never have it but when *in company*, or *associated*.

Now it should seem that this Distinction, if any, was essential. For all Words are significant or else they would not be Words ; and if every thing not *absolute*, is of course *relative*, then will all Words be significant either *absolutely* or *relatively*.

WITH respect therefore to this Distinction, the first sort of Words may be call'd *significant by themselves* ; the latter may be call'd *significant by relation* ; or if we like it better, the first sort may be called *Principals*, the latter *Accessories*. The first are like those stones in the basis of an Arch, which are able to support themselves, even when the Arch is destroyed ; the latter are like those stones in its Summit or Curve, which can no longer stand, than while the whole subsists.¹⁰

¹⁰ *Apollonius of Alexandria* (one of the acutest Authors that ever wrote on the Subject of Grammar) illustrates the different power of Words, by the different power of Letters. "Ετι, δν τρόπον τῶν σοιχείων τὰ μέν

§ This Distinction being admitted we thus pursue our Speculations. All things whatever either *exist as the Energies, or*

ἐσι φωνήεντα, ἢ οὐ καθ' ἑαυτὰ φωνὴν ἀποτελεῖ· τὰ δὲ σύμφωνα, ἄπερ ἄνευ τῶν φωνηέντων ἐκ ἔχει ρῆτὴν τὴν ἐκφωνησιν. τὸν αὐτὸν τρόπον ἐτὸν ἐπινοῆσαι καὶ τῶν λέξεων. αἱ μὲν γὰρ αὐτῶν, τρόπον τινὰ τῶν φωνηέντων ὥπται εἰσὶ· καθάπερ ἐτὶ τῶν ρήμάτων, δινομάτων, ἀντωνυμιῶν, ἐπιρρήμάτων.—αἱ δὲ, ὡσπερεὶ σύμφωνα, ἀναμένεσι τὰ φωνήεντα, ἢ δυνάμενα καὶ ἰδίαν ρῆτὰ εἶναι—καθάπερ ἐπὶ τῶν προθέσεων, τῶν ἄρθρων, τῶν συνδέσμων· τὰ γὰρ τοιαῦτα ἀεὶ τῶν μορίων συστημαίνει. In the same manner, as of the Elements or Letters, some are Vowels, which of themselves complete a Sound; others are Consonants, which without the help of Vowels have no express vocality; so likewise may we conceive as to the nature of Words. Some of them like Vowels, are of themselves expressive, as is the case of Verbs, Nouns, Pronouns, and Adverbs; others, like Consonants, wait for their Vowels, being unable to become expressive by their own proper strength, as is the case of Prepositions, Articles, and Conjunctions; for these parts of Speech are always Consignificant, that is, are only significant, when associated to something else. Apollon. de Syntaxi. L. I. c 3. Itaque quibusdam philosophis placuit NOMEN ET VERBUM SOLAS ESSE PARTES ORATIONIS; cætera vero ADMINICULA vel JUNCTURAS earum: quomodo navium partes sunt tabulae et trabes, cætera autem (*id est*, cera, stappa, et clavi, et similia) vincula et conglutinationes partium navis (*hoc est*, tabu-

Affections, of some other thing, or without being the Energies or Affections of some other thing. If they exist as the Energies or Affections of something else, then are they called ATTRIBUTES.—Thus *to think* is the attribute of a Man; *to be white*, of a Swan; *to fly*, of an Eagle; *to be four-footed*, of a Horse.—If they exist not after this manner, then are they called SUBSTANCES.* Thus *Man, Swan, Eagle, and Horse*, are none of them Attributes, but all Substances, because however they may exist in Time and Place, yet neither of these, nor of any thing else, do they exist as Energies, or Affections.

AND thus all things whatsoever, being

larum et trabium) non partes navis dicuntur. Prise. L. XI. 918.

* SUBSTANCES.] Thus Aristotle. Νῦν μὲν ἐν τόπῳ εἰργται, τι ποτ' εἰσὶν ή ἔστια, διε τὸ μὴ καθ' ὑποκειμένος, ἀλλὰ καθ' ἕτερα ἀλλα. Metaph. Z γ. p. 106. Ed. Sylb.

either ⁽¹⁾ *Substances* or *Attributes*, it follows of course that all Words, which are significant as *Principals*, must needs be significant of either the one or the other. If they are significant of *Substances*, they are called *Substantives*; if of *Attributes*, they are called *Attributives*. So that ALL WORDS whatever, significant as *Principals*, are either **SUBSTANTIVES OR ATTRIBUTIVES.**

AGAIN, as to Words, which are only significant as *Accessories*, they acquire a Signification either from being associated to one Word or else to many. If to one Word alone, then as they can do no more than in some manner *define* or *determine*, they may justly for that reason be called **DEFINI-**

⁽¹⁾ This division of things into *Substance* and *Attribute* seems to have been admitted by Philosophers of all Sects and ages. See *Catagor.* c. 2; *Metaphys.* L. VII. c. 1. *De Celo,* L. III. c. 1.

TIVES. If to many Words at once, then as they serve to no other purpose than to connect, they are called for that reason by the name of CONNECTIVES.

AND thus it is that all WORDS whatever are either *Principals* or *Accessories*; or under other Names, either *significant from themselves*, or *significant by relation*.—If *significant from themselves*, they are either *Substantives* or *Attributives*; if *significant by relation*, they are either *Definitives* or *Connectives*. So that under one of these four Species, SUBSTANTIVES, ATTRIBUTIVES, DEFINITIVES, and CONNECTIVES are ALL WORDS, however different, in a manner included.

If any of these Names seem new and unusual, we may introduce others more usual, by calling the *Substantives*, NOUNS; the *Attributives*, VERBS; the *Definitives*,

ARTICLES; and the *Connectives, Conjunctions.*

SHOULD it be asked, what then becomes of *Pronouns, Adverbs, Prepositions, and Interjections*; the answer is, either they must be found included within the Species above-mentioned, or else must be admitted for so many Species by themselves.

§ THERE were various opinions in ancient Days, as to the *number* of these Parts or Elements of Speech.

Plato in his *Sophist mentions only two, the *Noun* and the *Verb*. Aristotle mentions no more, where he treats of †Prepositions. Not that those acute Philosophers were ignorant of the other Parts, but they spoke with reference to *Logic* or *Dialect*.

* Tom. I, p. 261. Edit. Ser.

† De Interpr. c. 2 and 3.

tic^()* considering the Essence of Speech as contained in these two, because *these alone* combined make a perfect assertive Sentence, which none of the rest without them are able to effect. Hence therefore Aristotle in his **treatise of Poetry* (where he was to lay down the elements of a more

^(*) *Partes igitur orationis sunt secundum Dialecticos due, Nomen et Verbum; quia haec sole etiam per se conjunctae plenam faciunt orationem; alias autem partes συγκαρησθήσαται, hoc est, consignificantia appellabant.* Priscian l. 2. p. 574. Edit. Putschii. Existit hic quedam questio, cur duo tantum, Nomen et Verbum, se (Aristoteles sc.) determinare promittat, cum plures partes orationis esse videantur. Quibus hoc dicendum est, tantum Aristotelem hoc libro diffisiisse, quantum illi ad id, quod instituerat tractare, sufficit. Tractat namque de simplici enuntiativa oratione, que scilicet hujusmodi est, ut junctis tantum Verbis et Nominaibus componatur.—Quare superfluum est querere, cur alias quoque, que videntur orationis partes, non proposuerit, qui non totius simpliciter orationis, sed tantum simplicitis orationis instituit elementa partiri. Boetius in Libr. de Interpretat. p. 295. Apollonius from the above principles elegantly calls the Noun and Verb τὰ ἐμψυχότα πέπον τοῦ λόγου, the most animated parts of Speech. *De Syntaxi*, l. 1. c. 3. p. 24. See also Plutarch. Quest. Platon. p. 1009.

* *Poet. Cap. 20.*

variegated speech) adds the *Article* and *Conjunction* to the Noun and Verb, and so adopts the same Parts, with those established in this Treatise. To *Aristotle's* authority (if indeed better can be required) may be added that also of the elder *Stoicks*.⁽⁴⁾

THE latter *Stoicks* instead of four Parts made five, by dividing the Noun into the *Appellative* and *Proper*. Others increased the number, by detaching the *Pronoun* from the Noun; the *Participle* and *Adverb* from the Verb; and the *Preposition* from the Conjunction. The *Latin Grammarians* went farther, and detached the *Interjection* from the Adverb, within which by the Greeks it was always included, as a Species.

⁽⁴⁾ For this we have the authority of *Dionysius, of Halicarnassus, De Struct. Orat. Sect. 2.* whom *Quintilian follows, Inst. l. 1. c. 4.* *Diogenes Laertius* and *Priscian make them always to have admitted five parts.* See *Priecian*, as before, and *Laertius, Lib. VII. Segm. 57.*

WE are told indeed by ⁽¹⁾ *Dionysius of Halicarnassus* and *Quintilian*, that *Aristotle* with *Theodectes*, and the more early writers, held but *three* parts of speech, the *Noun* the *Verb*, and the *Conjunction*. This, it must be owned, accords with the oriental Tongues, whose Grammars (we are ⁽²⁾ told) admit no other. But as to *Aristotle*, we have his own authority to assert the contrary, who not only enumerates the *four* Species which we have adopted, but

⁽¹⁾ See the places quoted in the note immediately preceding.

⁽²⁾ *Antiquissima eorum est opinio, quā tres classes faciunt. Estque hec Arabum quoque sententia—Hebræi quoque (qui, cum Arabes Grammaticam scribere desinarent, artem eam demum scribere cœperunt, quod ante annos contigit circiter quadringentos) Hebræi, inquam, hac in re secuti sunt magistros suos Arabes.—Immo vero triū classum numerum aliae etiā Orientis linguae retinent.—Dubium, utrum cā in re Orientales imitati sunt antiquos Græcorum, an hī potius secuti sunt Orientalium exemplum. Utut est, etiam veteres Græcos tres tantum partes agnoverisse, non solum autor est Dionysius, &c. Voss. de Analog. l. 1. c. 1. See also Sanctii Minerv. l. 1. c. 2.*

ascertains them each by a proper Definition.*

To conclude—the Subject of the following Chapters will be a distinct and separate consideration of the NOUN, the VERB, the ARTICLE, and the CONJUNCTION; which four, the better (as we apprehend) to express their respective natures, we chuse to call SUBSTANTIVES, ATTRIBUTIVES, DEFINITIVES, and CONNECTIVES.

* Sup. p 34.

CHAP. IV.

Concerning Substantives properly so called.

↑ **SUBSTANTIVES** are *all those principal Words, which are significant of Substances considered as Substances.*

THE first sort of *Substances* are the **NATURAL**, such as Animal, Vegetable, Man, Oak.

THERE are other Substances *of our own making*. Thus by giving a Figure *not natural* to *natural* Materials, we create such Substances, as House, Ship, Watch, Telescope, &c.

AGAIN, by a *more refined operation of our Mind alone* we *abstract any Attribute* from its necessary subject, and consider it *apart*, devoid of its dependence. For

example, from Body we abstract *to Fly* ; from Surface, *the being White* ; from Soul *the being Temperate*.

AND thus it is we convert even *Attributes* into *Substances*, denoting them on this occasion by proper *Substantives*, such as *Flight*, *Whiteness*, *Temperance* ; or else by others more general, such as *Motion*, *Colour*, *Virtue*. These we call ABSTRACT SUBSTANCES ; the second sort we call ARTIFICIAL.

Now all those several Substances have their Genus, their Species, and their Individuals. For example, in *natural* Substances, *Animal* is a Genus ; *Man*, a Species : *Alexander*, an Individual. In *artificial* Substances, *Edifice* is a Genus ; *Palace*, a Species ; *the Vatican* an Individual. In *abstract* Substances, *Motion* is a Genus ; *Flight*, a Species ; *this Flight* or *that Flight* are Individuals.

As therefore every "^(*) Genus may be found *whole and intire in each one of its Species*; (for thus Man, Horse, and Dog, are each of them distinctly a complete and intire Animal); and as every SPECIES may be found *whole and intire in each one of its Individuals* (for thus Socrates, Plato and Xenophon, are each of them completely and distinctly *a Man*); hence it is, that every *Genus*, though ONE is multiplied into MANY; and every *Species*, though ONE, is also multiplied into MANY, by reference to those beings which are their proper subordinates. Since, then, no individual has any such subordinates, it can never in strictness be considered as MANY, and so is truly an INDIVIDUAL as well in *Nature* as in Name.

^(*) This is what *Plato* seems to have expressed in a manner somewhat mysterious, when he talks of μίαν ἴδεαν διὰ πολλῶν, ἐνὸς ἑκάτε κειμένη χωρὶς, πάντη διατεταμένη—ἢ πολλὰς, ἐτέρας ἀλλήλων, ὑπὸ μιᾶς ἔξωθεν περιεχομένας.—*Sophist.* p. 253 *Edit.* *Serrani.* For the common definition of Genus and Species, see the *Isagoge* or *Introduction* of *Porphyry* to *Aristotle's Logic*.

FROM these Principles it is, that *Words* following the nature and genius of *Things* such *Substantives* admit of *NUMBER* as denote *Genera* or *Species*, while those which denote ^(*) *Individuals*, in strictness, admit it not.

^(*) Yet sometimes *Individuals* have plurality or *Number*, from the causes following. In the first place the Individuals of the human race are so large a multitude, even in the smallest nation, that it would be difficult to invent a new Name for every new-born Individual.— Hence, then, instead of *one only* being call'd *Marcus*, and *one only* *Antonius*, it happens that *many* are called *Marcus* and many called *Antonius*; and thus 'tis the Romans had their Plurals, *Marci* and *Antonii*, as we in later days have our *Marks* and our *Antonies*. Now the Plurals of this sort may be well called *accidental*, because it is merely by chance that the names coincide.

There seems more reason for such Plurals, as the *Ptolemies*, *Scipios*, *Catos*, or (to instance in modern names) the *Howards*, *Pelhams*, and *Montagues*; because a *Race* or *Family* is like a *smaller sort of Species*; so that the *family Name* extends to the Kindred, as the specific Name extends to the Individuals.

A third cause which contributed to make proper Names become Plural, was the *high Character* or *Eminence* of some one Individual, whose *Name* became afterwards a kind of *common Appellative*, to denote all those who had pretensions

BESIDES *Number*, another characteristic visible in Substances, is that of *Sex*. Every Substance is either *Male* or *Female*; or both *Male* and *Female*; or neither one nor the other. So that with respect to *Sexes* and their *Negation*, all Substances conceivable are comprehended under this *fourfold* consideration.

Now the existence of *Hermaphrodites* being rare, if not doubtful; hence Lan-

to merit in the same way. Thus every great *Critic* was called an *Aristarchus*; every great *Warrior*, an *Alexander*; every great *Beauty*, a *Helen*, &c.

A DANIEL come to judgment! yea, a DANIEL,
cries *Skylock* in the Play, when he would express the wisdom of the young Lawyer.

So *Martial* in that well-known verse,

Sint MÆCENATES, non deerunt, Flacce, MARONES.

So *Lucilius*,

ΑΙΓΑΙΑΙΠΟΙ montes, ΑΞΤΝΕ omnes, asperi ATHONES.
πόσσοι ΦΑΕΘΟΝΤΕΣ, ἡ ΔΕΥΚΑΛΙΩΝΕΣ. Lucian in Timon. T. I. p. 108.

guage, only regarding those distinctions which are more obvious, considers *Words denoting Substances* to be either MASCULINE, FEMININE, or NEUTER.*

As to our own Species, and all those animal Species, *which have reference to common Life*, or of which the Male and the Female, by their size, form, colour, &c. are *eminently distinguished*, most Languages have different substantives, to denote the Male and the Female.—But as to those animal Species, which either *less frequently occur*, or of which one Sex is *less apparently distinguished* from the other, in these a single Substantive commonly serves for both Sexes.

* After this manner they are distinguished by Aristotle. Τῶν δινομάτων τὰ μὲν ἄρρενα, τὰ δὲ θῆλεα, τὰ δὲ μεταξύ. Poet. cap. 21. Protagoras before him had established the same Distinction, calling them ἄρρενα, θῆλεα, καὶ σκεύη.—Aristot. Rhet. L. III. c. 5. Where mark, what were afterwards called ἄλλετερα, or Neuters, were by these called τὰ μεταξὺ καὶ σκεύη.

* IN the English Tongue it seems a general rule (except only when infringed by a figure of Speech) that no Substantive is *Masculine*, but what denotes a *Male animal Substance*; none *Feminine* but what denotes a *Female animal Substance*; and that where the Substance has no Sex, the Substantive is always *Neuter*.

BUT 'tis not so in *Greek*, *Latin*, and many of the *modern Tongues*. These all of them have Words, some masculine, some feminine (and those too in great multitudes which have reference to Substances, where Sex never had existence. To give one instance for many. *MIND* is surely neither male, nor female; yet is ΝΟΥΣ, in *Greek* masculine, and *MENS*, in *Latin*, feminine.

* *Nam quicquid per Naturam Sexui non adsignatur, neutrum haberi oportet, sed id Ars, &c. Consent. apud Futsch. p. 2023, 2024.*

The whole passage from *Genera Hominum, que naturalia sunt, &c.* is worth perusing.

IN some Words these distinctions seem owing to nothing else, than to the mere casual structure of the Word itself: It is of such a Gender from having such a Termination; or from belonging perhaps to such a declension. In others we may imagine a more subtle kind of reasoning, a reasoning which discerns, even *in things without Sex*, a distant analogy to that great NATURAL DISTINCTION, which (according to Milton) *animates the World.**

IN this view, we may conceive such SUBSTANTIVES to have been considered as MASCULINE, which were “conspicuous “for the Attributes of imparting or communicating; or which were by nature “active, strong, and efficacious, and that “indiscriminately whether to good or to

* Mr. *Linnæus*, the celebrated Botanist, has traced the *Distinction of Sexes* throughout the whole *Vegetable World*, and made it the Basis of his Botanic Method.

“ ill ; or which had claim to Eminence,
“ either laudable or otherwise.”

THE FEMININE, on the contrary, were
“ such as were conspicuous for the Attri-
“ butes either of receiving, or of contain-
“ ing, or of producing and bringing forth ;
“ or which had more of the passive in
“ their nature, than of the active ; or
“ which were peculiarly beautiful and
“ amiable ; or which had respect to such
“ excesses, as were rather Feminine, than
“ Masculine.”]

UPON these Principles the two greater Luminaries were considered, one as Masculine, the other as Feminine ; the SUN (*Ηλιος Sol*) as *Masculine*, from communicating Light, which was native and original, as well as from the vigorous warmth and efficacy of his Rays ; the MOON *Σελήνη Luna*) as *Feminine*, from being the Recep-

tache only of another's Light, and from
shining with rays more delicate and soft.

THUS Milton,

*First in his East the glorious Lamp was seen,
Regent of Day, and all th' Horizon round
Invested with bright rays; jocund to run
His longitude thro' Heav'n's high road: the gray
Dawn, and the Pleiades before him danc'd
Shedding sweet influence. Less bright the Moon
But opposite, in levell'd West was set,
His mirror, with full face borrowing her Light
From him; for other light she needed none.*

P. L. VII. 370.

By *Virgil* they were considered as
Brother and *Sister*, which still preserves
the same distinction.

Nec FRATRIS radius obnoxia surgere LUNA.

G. I. 396.

THE SKY or ETHER is in *Greek* and
Latin Masculine, as being the source of
those showers, which impregnate the Earth.

*The EARTH on the contrary is universally *Feminine*, from being the grand *Receiver*, the grand *Container*, but above all from being the *Mother* (either mediately or immediately) of every sublunary Substance, whether animal or vegetable.

Thus Virgil,

*Tum PATER OMNIPOTENS fæcundis imbribus
ÆTHER
CONJUGIS in gremium LÆTE descendit, et omnes.
Magnus alit magno commixtus corpore fætus.*

G. II. 325.

Thus Shakespear,

—† COMMON MOTHER, Thou
Whose Womb unmeasurable, and infinite breast
Teems and feeds all—Tim. of Athens..

So Milton,

Whatever Earth, ALL-BEARING MOTHER, yields.
P. L. V.

* Senecæ Nat. Quæst. III. 14.

† Παμπτορ γῆ χωρε—Grac. Anth. p. 281.

So *Virgil*,

Non jam MATER alit TELLUS, viresque ministrat.^()*

AEn. XI. 71.

AMONG *artificial* Substances the SHIP (*Naūς, Navis*) is *feminine*, as being so eminently a *Receiver* and *Container* of various things, of Men, Arms, Provisions, Goods, &c. Hence Sailors, speaking of their vessel, say always, “*SHE rides at anchor*,” “*SHE is under sail*.”

A CITY (*Πόλις, Civitas*) and a COUNTRY, (*Πάτρις, Patria*) are *feminine* also, by being (like the Ship) *Containers* and *Receivers*, and farther by being as it were the *Mothers* and *Nurses* of their respective Inhabitants.

^(*)—διὸ δὲ ἐν τῷ δλῳ τὴν ΓΗΣ φύσει, ὡς ΘΗΛΥ δὲ ΜΗΤΕΡΑ νομίζεσσιν ΟΥΡΑΝΟΝ δὲ δὲ ΗΙΟΝ, δὲ εἰ τῶν ἀλλων τῶν τούτων ὡς ΓΕΝΩΝΤΑΣ δὲ ΠΑΤΕΡΑΣ προσαγορεύεσσι. Arist. de Gener. Anim. 1. c. 2.

Thus *Virgil*,

Salve, MAGNA PARENTS FRUGUM, Saturnia Tel-
lus.

MAGNA VIRUM—

Geor. II. 173.

So, in that Heroic Epigram on those
brave Greeks, who fell at *Chæronea*,

Γαῖα δὲ Πάτρις ἔχει κόλποις τῶν πλεῖστα καμόντων
 Σώματα—

Their PARENT COUNTRY in her bosom holds
*Their wearied bodies.—**

So *Milton*,

The City, which Thou seest, no other deem
Than great and glorious Rome, QUEEN of the
Earth.

Par. Reg. L. IV.

As to the OCEAN, tho' from its being
the *Receiver* of all Rivers, as well as the
Container and *Productress* of so many

* Demost. in Orat. de Corona.

Vegetables and Animals, it might justly have been made (like the Earth) *Feminine*; yet its *deep Voice* and *boisterous Nature* have, in spite of these reasons, prevailed to make it *Male*. Indeed the very sound of *Homer's*

— μέγα σθίνεται Ωκεανός,

would suggest to a hearer, even ignorant of its meaning, that the Subject was incompatible with *female* delicacy and softness.

TIME (*Xρόνος*) from his mighty efficacy upon every thing around us, is by the Greeks and English justly considered as *Masculine*. Thus in that elegant distich, spoken by a decrepit old Man,

* Ο γὰρ Χρόνος μὲν ἔκαμψε, τέκτων καὶ σοφὸς,
Ἄπαντα δὲ ἤγαδόμενος ἀσθενίζει φα. †

* Ο Χρόνε, παντοῖων θυητῶν πανεπίσκοπε Δαίμον. Græc. Anth. p. 290.

† Stob. Ecl. p. 591.

*Me TIME hath bent, that sorry Artist, HE
That surely makes, whate'er he handles, worse.*

So too *Shakespear*, speaking likewise of
TIME,

Orl. *Whom doth he gallop withal?*

Ros. *With a thief to the gallows.*—

As you like it.

THE Greek Θάνατος or Άιδης, and the English DEATH, seem from the same irresistible power to have been considered as *Masculine*. Even the vulgar with us are so accustomed to this notion, that a FEMALE DEATH they would treat as ridiculous.^(*)

(*) Well therefore did *Milton* in his *Paradise Lost* not only adopt DEATH as a *Person*, but consider him as *Masculine*: in which he was so far from introducing a Phantom of his own, or from giving it a *Gender not supported by Custom*, that perhaps he had as much the *Sanction of national Opinion* for his *Masculine Death*, as the ancient Poets had for many of their Deities.

TAKE a few examples of the masculine Death.

Callimachus upon the Elegies of his Friend *Heraclitus*—

'Αι δὲ τοι γένεσιν αἴδονες, ησίν δὲ πάντων
Αργάστηρ Ἀΐδης εὐκαὶ πτί χεῖρα βαλεῖ.

—yet thy sweet warbling strains
Still live immortal, nor on them shall DEATH
His hand e'er lay, tho' Ravager of all.

In the *Alcestis* of *Euripides*, Θάνατος or DEATH is one of the Persons of the drama; the beginning of the play is made up of dialogue between *Him* and *Apollo*; and towards its end there is a fight between *Him* and *Hercules*, in which *Hercules* is conqueror, and rescues *Alcestis* from his hands.

IT is well known too, that SLEEP and

DEATH are made *Brothers* by *Homer*. It was to this old *Georgias* elegantly alluded, when at the extremity of a long life he lay slumbering on his Death-bed. A Friend asked him, “*How he did?*” “SLEEP (replied the old Man) *is just upon delivering me over to the care of his BROTHER.*^o

THUS *Shakespear*, speaking of Life,

—merely Thou art Death's Fool;
For HIM Thou labour'st by thy flight to shun,
And yet run'st towards HIM still.

Meas. for Meas.

So *Milton*,

Dire was the tossing, deep the groans; Despair
Tended the sick, busiest from couch to couch:
And over them triumphant DEATH HIS dart
Shook; but delay'd to strike—

P. L. XI. 489.^o

^o Ἡδη με Ο ΥΠΝΟΣ ἄρχεται παρακατατίθεσθαι τΑΔΕΛΦΩΙ. Stob. Ecl. p. 600.

^o Suppose in any one of these examples we introduce a *female Death*; suppose we read,

THE supreme Being (God, Θεός, *Deus*, *Dieu*, &c.) is in all languages *Masculine*, in as much as the masculine Sex is the superior and more excellent; and as He is the Creator of all, the Father of Gods and Men. Sometimes indeed we meet with such words as Τὸ Πρῶτον, Τὸ Θεῖον *Numen*, **DEITY** (which last we *English* join to a neuter, saying *Deity itself*) sometimes, I say, we meet with these *Neuters*. The reason in these instances seems to be, that as God is prior to all things, both in dignity and in time, this Priority is better characterized and express by a *Negation*, than by any of those Distinctions which are *co-ordinate with some Opposite*, as Male,

*And over them triumphant Death her dart
Shook, &c.*

What a falling off! How are the nerves and strength of the whole sentiment weakened!

for example is co-ordinate with Female,
Right with Left, &c. &c.^(*)

VIRTUE ('Αρετή, *Virtus*) as well as most of its Species, are all *Feminine*, perhaps from their Beauty and amiable Appearance, which are not without effect even upon the most reprobate and corrupt.

^(*) Thus *Ammonius*, speaking on the same Subject—
ΤΟ ΠΡΩΤΟΝ λέγομεν ἐφ' ω̄ μὴ δὲ τῶν διὰ μυθολογίας παραδόντων ἡμῖν τὰς θεολογίας ἐπόλυμησέ τις ἢ ἀρρένωπὸν, ἢ θυληπρεπῆ (lege θηλυπρεπῆ) διαμόρφωσιν φέρειν. Η τῦτο εἰκότως τῷ μὲν γὰρ ἀρρένι τὸ θῆλυ σύνοιχον τὸ (lege τῷ) δὲ ΠΑΝΤΗΙ ΑΠΛΩΣ ΑΙΤΙΩΙ σύνοιχον ὄδεν. ἀλλὰ ἡ ὅταν ἀρσενικῶς ΤΟΝ ΘΕΟΝ ὀνομάζομεν, [πρὸς] τὸ σεμνοτέρον τῶν γενῶν, τῷ ὑφειμένῳ προτιμῶντες, ὅτως αὐτὸν προσαγορεύομεν. PRIMUM dicimus, quod nemo etiam eorum, qui theologiam nobis fabularum integrimentis abeundam tradiderunt, vel maris vel feminæ specie fingere aures est: idque merito: conjugatum enim mari femininum est. CAUSE autem omnino ABSOLUTÆ AC SIMPLICI nihil est conjugatum. Immo vero cum Deum masculino genere appellamus, ita ipsum nominamus, genus præstantius submisso atque humili præferentes.—Ammon. in Lib. de Interpr. p. 30. b.—δ γὰρ ἐναντίον τῷ Πρώτῳ ὄδεν. Aristot. Metaph. A. p. 210. Sylb.

—*abash'd the Devil stood,
And felt how awful Goodness is, and saw
VIRTUE in her shape how lovely ; saw and pin'd
His loss—*

P. L. IV. 846.

THIS being allowed, VICE (*Kaxia*) becomes *Feminine* of course, as being, in the *συνοιχία*, or Co-ordination of things, Virtue's natural Opposite ⁽⁴⁾

THE Fancies, Caprices, and fickle Changes of FORTUNE would appear but awkwardly under a Character that was Male : but taken together they make a

⁽⁴⁾ They are both represented as *Females* by Xenophon in the celebrated Story of *Hercules*, taken from *Prodicus*. see *Memorab.* L. II. c. 1. As to the *συνοιχία* here mentioned, thus Varro—Pythagoras Samius ait omnium rerum initia esse bina : ut finitum et infinitum, bonum et malum, vitam et mortem, diem et noctem. De Ling. Lat. L. IV. See also *Arist. Metaph.* L. 1. c. 5. and *Ecclesiasticus*, Chap. lxii. ver. 24.

very natural *Female*, which has no small resemblance to the Coquette of a modern Comedy, bestowing, withdrawing and shifting her favours, as different Beaus succeed to her good graces.

*Transmutat incertos honores,
Nunc mihi, nunc alii benigna.* Hor.

WHY the FURIES were made *Female*, is not so easy to explain, unless it be that female Passions of all kinds were considered as susceptible of greater excess, than male Passions; and that the *Furies* were to be represented, as things superlativclv outrageous.

*Talibus Alecto dictis exarsit in iras.
At Juveni oranti subitus tremor occupat artus :
Diriguere oculi: tot Erinnys sibilat Hydris,
Tantaque se facies aperit: tum flammae torquens
Lumina cunctantem et querentem dicere plura
Repulit, et geminos erexit crinibus angues,*

*Verberaque insonuit, rabidoque hæc addidit ore :
En ! Ego victa situ, &c.*

AEn. VII. 455.⁽⁶⁾

He, that would see more on this Subject, may consult *Ammonius* the Peripatetic, in his Commentary on the Treatise *de Interpretatione*, where the Subject is treated at

⁽⁶⁾ The Words above mentioned, *Time*, *Death*, *Fortune*, *Virtue*, &c. in *Greek*, *Latin*, *French*, and most modern Languages, though they are diversified with Genders in the manner described, yet never vary the Gender which they have once acquired, except in a few instances, where the Gender is doubtful. We cannot say η ἀρενη or δ ἀρενη *hæc Virtus* or *hic Virtus*, *la Virtu* or *le Virtu* and so of the rest. But it is otherwise in *English*. We in our own language say, Virtue is *its* own reward, or Virtue is *her* own reward; Time maintains *its* wonted Pace, or Time maintains *his* wonted Pace.

There is a singular advantage in this liberty, as it enables us to mark, with a peculiar force, the Distinction between the severe or *Logical* Style, and the ornamental or *Rhetorical*. For thus when we speak of the above

large with respect to the *Greek Tongue*. We shall only observe, that as all such

Words, and of all others naturally devoid of Sex, as *Neuters*, we speak of them *as they are*, and as becomes a *logical Inquiry*. When we give them *Sex*, by making them *Masculine or Feminine*, they are from thenceforth *personified*; are a kind of *intelligent Beings*, and become, as such, the proper ornaments either of *Rhetoric* or of *Poetry*.

Thus *Milton*,

—*The Thunder,*
Wing'd with red light'ning and impetuous rage,
Perhaps hath spent his shafts — P. Lost I. 174,

The Poet having just before called the *Hail*, and *Thunder*, God's *Ministers of Vengeance*, and so personified them, had he afterwards said *its Shafts* for *his Shafts*, would have destroyed his own Image, and approached withal so much nearer to Prose.

The following Passage is from the same Poem.

Should intermitting Vengeance arm again
His red right hand —

P. L. II. 174.

In this Place *His Hand* is clearly preferable either to *Hers* or *Its*, by immediately referring us to *God himself*, the Avenger.

Speculations are at best but Conjectures; they should therefore be received with candour rather than scrutinized with rigour. *Varro's words on a Subject near akin, are, for their aptness and elegance, well worth attending. Non mediocres enim tenebræ in*

I shall only give one instance more, and quit this Subject.

*At his command th' up-rooted Hills retir'd
Each to his place: they heard his voice and went
Obsequious: Heav'n his wonted face renew'd,
And with fresh flowrets Hill and Valley smil'd.*

P. L. VI.

See also ver. 54, 55, of the same Book.

Here all things are personified; the Hills *hear*, the Valleys *smile*, and the *Face* of Heaven is renewed.—Suppose then the Poet had been necessitated by the laws of his Language to have said—*Each hill retir'd to its Place—Heaven renew'd its wonted face*—how prosaic and lifeless would these Neuters have appeared; how detrimental to the *Prosopopeia*, which he was aiming to establish! In this therefore he was happy, that the Language in which he wrote imposed no such necessity; and he was too wise a Writer, to impose it on himself. It were to be wished, his correctors had been as wise on their parts.

*silvā, ubi hæc captanda; neque eð, quð per-
venire volumus, semitæ tritæ; neque non in
tramitibus quædam objecta, quæ euntem
retinere possunt.**

To conclude this Chapter. We may collect from what has been said, that both NUMBER and GENDER appertain to WORDS, because in the first place they appertain to THINGS; that is to say, because Substances are Many, and have either Sex or no Sex; therefore Substantives have Number, and are Masculine, Feminine, or Neuter. There is however this difference between the two Attributes: NUMBER, in strictness, descends no lower, than to the last Rank of Species: ^(*) GENDER on the

* De Ling. Lat. L. IV.

^(*) The reason why Number goes no lower is, that it does not naturally appertain to Individuals: the cause of which see before, p. 39.

contrary stops not here, but descends to
every Individual, however diversified. And
so much for **S U B S T A N T I V E S**, PROPERLY
S O C A L L E D.

CHAP. V.

Concerning Substantives of the Secondary Order.

WE are now to proceed to a SECONDARY RACE of SUBSTANTIVES, a Race quite different from any already mentioned, and whose Nature may be explained in the following manner.

EVERY Object which presents itself to the Senses or the Intellect, is either then perceived for the *first time*, or else is recognized as having been perceived *before*. In the former case it is called an Object τῆς πρώτης γνώσεως, *of the first knowledge* or *acquaintance*; ^(a) in the latter it is called

^(a) See *Apoll. de Syntaxi*, l. 1. c. 16. p. 49. l. 2. c. 3. p. 103. Thus Priscian—*Interest autem inter demonstrationem et relationem hoc; quod demonstratio, interrogacioni redditum, Primam Cognitionem ostendit; Quis fecit? Ego; relatio*

an Object τῆς δεύτερας γνώσεως, *of the second knowledge or acquaintance.*

Now as all Conversation passes between *Particulars* or *Individuals*, these will often happen to be reciprocally Objects τῆς πρώτης γνώσεως, that is to say, *till that instant unacquainted with each other.* What then is to be done? How shall the Speaker address the other when he knows not his Name? or how explain himself by his own Name, of which the other is wholly ignorant? Nouns, as they have been described, cannot answer the purpose. The first expedient upon this occasion seems to have been Δεῖξις, that is *Pointing*, or *Indication by the Finger or Hand*, some traces of which are still to be observed, as a part of that Action which naturally attends our

vero Secundam Cognitionem significat, ut, Is, de quo jam dixi. Lib. XII. p. 936. Edit. Putschii.

But the Authors of Language were not content with this. They invented a race of *Words to supply this Pointing*; which Words, *as they always stood for Substantives or Nouns*, were characterized by the Name of Ἀντωνυμία, or **PRONOUNS.**⁽⁶⁾ These also they distinguished into three several sorts, calling them *Pronouns of the First, the Second, and the Third Person*, with a view to certain distinctions, which may be explained as follows.

SUPPOSE the Parties conversing to be wholly unacquainted, neither Name nor

⁽⁶⁾ Εκεῖνο δν Ἀντωνυμία, τὸ μετὰ ΔΕΙΣΘΕΩΣ ἡ ἀναφορᾶς ἘΝΤΩΝΟΜΑΖΟΜΕΝΟΝ. Apoll. de Synt. L. II. c. 5. p. 106. Priscian seems to consider them so peculiarly destined to the expression of *Individuals*, that he does not say they supply the place of *any* Noun, but that of the *proper* Name only. And this undoubtedly was their original, and still is their true and natural use. ΠΡΟΝΟΜΕΝ *est pars orationis, quæ pro nomine proprio uniuscujusque accipitur.* Prisc. L. XII. See also Apoll. L. II. c. 9. p. 117, 118.

Countenance on either side known, and the Subject of the Conversation to be *the Speaker himself*. Here, to supply the place of Pointing by a Word of *equal* Power, they furnished the Speaker with the *Pronoun*, I. *I write, I say, I desire, &c.* and as the Speaker is always principal with respect to his own discourse, this they called for that reason *the Pronoun of the First Person.*

AGAIN, suppose the Subject of the Conversation to be *the Party addrest*. Here for similar reasons they invented the *Pronoun*, Thou. *Thou writest, Thou walkest, &c.* and as the Party addressed is next in dignity to the Speaker, or at least comes next with reference to the discourse; this Pronoun they therefore called *the Pronoun of the Second Person.*

LASTLY, suppose the Subject of Conversation neither the Speaker, nor the Party

address, but *some Third Object, different from both*. Here they provided another *Pronoun*. *HE SHE, or IT*, which in distinction to the two former was called *the Pronoun of the Third Person*.

AND thus it was that *Pronouns* came to be distinguished by their respective *PERSONS*.^(e)

^(e) The description of the different *PERSONS* here given is taken from *Priscian*, who took it from *Apollonius*. *Personæ Pronominum sunt tres; prima, secunda, tertia.* *Prima est, cum ipsa, quæ loquitur, de se pronuntiat;* *Secunda, cum de eâ pronunciat, ad quem directo sermone loquitur;* *Tertia, cum de eâ, quæ nec loquitur, nec ad se directum accipit sermonem.* L. XII. p. 940. *Theodore Gaza* gives the same Distinctions. Πρῶτον (πρόσωπον sc.) φερὶ ἑαυτῷ φράζει ὁ λέγων δέντρον, φερὶ τῷ πρὸς ὁ λέγος τρίτον, φερὶ ἔτρον. *Gaz. Gram.* L. IV. p. 152.

This account of *Persons* is far preferable to the common one, which makes the First the *Speaker*; the Second, the *Party address*; and the Third, the *Subject*. For though the First and Second be, as commonly described, one the

As to NUMBER, the Pronoun of each Person has it : (I) has the plural (WE), because there may be many Speakers at once of the same Sentiment ; as well as one,

Speaker, the other the Party addrest, yet, till they become subjects of *the discourse*, they have no existence. Again as to the Third Person's being the subject, this is a character which it shares in common with both the other Persons, and which can never therefore be called a peculiarity of its own. To explain by an instance or two. When *Aeneas* begins the narrative of his adventures, *the second Person* immediately appears, because he makes *Dido*, whom he addresses, the immediate subject of his Discourse.

Infandum, Regina, jubes, renovare dolorem.

From hence forward for 1500 Verses (though, she be all that time the party address) we hear nothing farther of this *Second Person*, a variety of other Subjects filling up the Narrative.

In the mean time the *First Person* may be seen every where, because the Speaker every where is himself the Subject. They were indeed Events, as he says himself,

—*quæque ipse miserrima vidi,*
Et quorum pars magna fui—

Not that the Second Person does not often occur in the

who, including himself, speaks the Sentiment of many. (*THOU*) has the plural (*you*), because a Speech may be spoken to many, as well as to one. (*HE*) has the plural (*THEY*), because the Subject of discourse is often many at once.

But tho' all these pronouns have *Number*, it does not appear either in *Greek* or *Latin* or any modern Language, that those of the first and second Person carry the distinctions of *Sex*. The reason seems to be,

course of this Narrative; but then it is always by a Figure of Speech, when those, who by their absence are in fact so many Third Persons, are converted into Second Persons by being introduced as *present*. The *real* Second Person (*Dido*) is never once hinted.

Thus far as to *Virgil*. But when we read *Euclid*, we find neither *First Person*, nor *Second*, in any Part of the whole Work. The reason is, that neither Speaker nor Party addrest (in which light we may always view the Writer and his reader) can possibly become the Subject of pure Mathematics, nor indeed can any thing else

that the Speaker and Hearer being generally present to each other, it would have been superfluous, to have marked a distinction by Art, which from Nature and even Dress was commonly^(a) apparent on both sides. But this does not hold with respect to the third Person, of whose Character and Distinctions (including Sex among the rest) we often know no more than what we learn from the discourse. And hence it is, that in most Languages *the third person* has its *Genders*, and that even *English* (which allows its Adjectives no Genders at all) has in this Pronoun the triple^(b) distinction of *He*, *She*, and *It*.

except abstract Quantity, which neither speaks itself, nor is spoken to by another.

^(a) *Demonstratio ipsa secum genus ostendit.* Priscian. L. XII. p. 942. See *Apoll. de Syntax.* L. II. c. 7. p. 109.

^(b) The Utility of this Distinction may be better found in supposing it away. Suppose, for example, we should read in history these words—*He caused him to destroy him*—and

HENCE too we see the reason why a single *Pronoun*, to each Person, an *I* to the *First*, and a *Thou* to the *Second*, are abundantly sufficient to all the purposes of

that we were to be informed the [He], which is here thrice repeated, stood each time for something different, that is to say, for a man for a Woman, and for a City, whose Names were *Alexander*, *Thais*, and *Persepolis*. Taking the Pronoun in this manner, divested of its genders, how would it appear, which was destroyed ; which was the destroyer ; and which the cause that moved to the destruction ? But there are not such doubts, when we hear the Genders distinguished ; when, instead of the ambiguous sentence, *He caused him to destroy him*, we are told with the proper distinctions, that *SHE caused HIM to destroy IT*. Then we know with certainty, what before we could not, that the Promoter was the woman ; that her Instrument was the Hero ; and that the Subject of their Cruelty was the unfortunate City.

“*Quæritur tamen cur prima quidem Persona et secunda singula Pronomina habeant, tertiam vero sex diverse indicent voces ? Ad quod respondendum est, quod prima quidem et secunda Persona ideo non egent diversis vocibus, quod semper præsentes inter se sunt, et demonstrativa; tertia vero Persona modo demonstrativa est, ut, Hic, Iste; modo relativa, ut Is, Ipse, &c.* Priscian. L. XII..p. 933. .

Speech. But it is not so with respect to the *Third Person*. The various relations of the various Objects exhibited by this (I mean relations of near and distant, present and absent, same and different, definite and indefinite, &c.) made it necessary that here there should not be one, but *many* Pronouns, such as *He*, *This*, *That*, *Other*, *Any*, *Some*, &c.

It must be confess, indeed, that all these Words do not always appear as *Pronouns*. When they stand by themselves, and represent some Noun (as when we say, *THIS is Virtue*, or δεικτικῶς, Give me *THAT*), then are they *Pronouns*. But when they are associated to some Noun (as when we say *THIS Habit* is *Virtue*; or δεικτικῶς, *THAT Man* defrauded me) then as they supply not the place of a Noun, but only serve to ascertain one, they fall rather into the Species of *Definitives* or *Articles*. That there is indeed a near re-

lation between *Pronouns* and *Articles*, the old Grammarians have all acknowledged, and some words it has been doubtful to which Class to refer. The best rule to distinguish them is this—The genuine *Pronoun* *always stands by itself*, assuming the *Power* of a Noun, and supplying its place—The genuine *Article* *never stands by itself*, but appears at all times associated to something else, requiring a Noun for its support, as much as *Attributes*^w or *Adjectives*.

^w Τὸ "Αρθρον μετὰ ὄντοματος, η̄ ή 'Αντωνυμία ἀντ' ὄντοματος. THE ARTICLE, stands WITH a Noun; but THE PRONOUN stands FOR a Noun. Apoll. L. I. c. 3. p. 22. 'Αντὰ δὲ τὰ ἀρθρα, τῆς πρὸς τὰ ὄντοματα συναρτήσεως ἀποσάντα, εἰς τὴν ὑποτεταγμένην ἀντωνυμίαν μεταπίπτει. Now Articles themselves, when they quit their Connection with Nouns, pass into such Pronouns as is proper upon the occasion. Ibid. Again—"Οταν τὸ "Αρθρον μὴ μετ' ὄντοματος παραλαμβάνηται, ποιήσηται δὲ σύνταξιν ὄντοματος ἵν προεκτεθείμεθα, ἐκ πάσης ἀνάγκης εἰς ἀντωνυμίαν μεταληφθήσεται, εἴγε ὡς ἐγγινόμενον μετ' ὄντοματος δυνάμει ἀντὶ ὄντοματος παρελήφθη. When the Article is

As to the Coalescence of these Pronouns, it is as follows. The First or Second will, either of them, by themselves coalesce

assumed without the Noun, and has (as we explained before) the same Syntax which the Noun has, it must of absolute necessity be admitted for a Pronoun, because it appears without a Noun, and yet is in Power assumed for one. Ejusd. L. II. c. 8. p. 113. L. I. c. 45. p. 96.—*Inter Pronomina et Articulos hoc Interest, quod Pronomina ea putantur, quæ, cum sola sint, vicem nominis complent, ut QUIS, ILLE, ISTE: Articuli vero cum Pronominibus, aut Nominibus, aut Participiis adjunguntur.* Donat. Gram. p. 1753.

Priscian, speaking of the Stoics, says as follows: *ARTICULIS autem PRONOMINA connumerantes, FINITOS ea ARTICULOS appellabant: ipsos autem Articulos, quibus nos caremus, INFINITOS ARTICULOS dicebant. Vel, ut alii dicunt, Articulos connumerabant PRONOMINIBUS, et ARTICULARIA eos PRONOMINA vocabant, &c.* Pris. L. I. p. 574. Varro, speaking of *Quisque* and *Hic*, calls them both ARTICLES, the first indefinite the second definite. *De Ling. Lat. L. VII.* See also L. IX. p. 132. Vossius, indeed, in his *Analogia* (L. I. c. 1.) opposes this Doctrine, because *Hic* has not the same power with the Greek Article δ. But he did not enough attend to the antient Writers on this

with the Third, but not with each other. For example, it is good sense, as well as good Grammar, to say in any Language—I AM He—THOU ART He—but we cannot say—I AM THOU—nor THOU ART I. The reason is, there is no absurdity for the Speaker to be the Subject also of the Discourse, as when we say, *I am He*; or for the Person addrest: as when we say, *Thou art He*. But for the same Person, in the same circumstances, to be at once the Speaker, and the Party addrest, this is impossible; and so therefore is the Coalescence of the First and Second Person.

AND now perhaps we have seen enough of *Pronouns* to perceive how they differ

Subject, who considered all Words, as ARTICLES, which being associated to Nouns (*and not standing in their place*) served in any manner to ascertain, and determine their signification.

from other Substantives. The others are *Primary*, these are their *Substitutes*; a kind of secondary Race, which were taken in aid, when for reasons already^(a) mentioned the others could not be used. It is moreover by means of these, and of *Articles*, which are nearly allied to them, that

^(a) See these reasons at the beginning of this chapter, of which reasons the principal one is, that “no Noun, properly so called, implies its own Presence. It is therefore “to ascertain such Presence, that the Pronoun is taken in “aid; and, hence it is, it becomes equivalent to δεῖξις, “that is, to *Pointing or Indication by the Finger.*” It is worth remarking in that Verse of *Persius*,

Sed pulchrum est DIGITO MONSTRAEARI, et dicier, HIC EST.
how the δεῖξις and the Pronoun are introduced together, and made to co-operate to the same end.

Sometimes by virtue of δεῖξις the Pronoun of the third Person stands for the *first*.

Quod si militibus parces, erit HIC quoque Miles.

That is, *I also will be a Soldier.*

Tibul. L. II. El. 6. v. 7. See *Valpius.*

" LANGUAGE, though in itself only significant of *general Ideas*, is brought down
" to denote *that infinitude of Particulars*,
" which are for ever arising, and ceasing
" to be." But more of this hereafter in a
proper place.

As to the three orders of Pronouns already mentioned, they may be called *Prepositive*, as may indeed all Substantives, because they are capable of introducing or leading a Sentence, without having reference to any thing previous. But besides those there is ANOTHER PRONOUN (in

It may be observed too, that even in Epistolary Correspondence, and indeed in all kinds of Writing, where the Pronouns I and You make their appearance, there is a sort of *implied Presence*, which they are supposed to indicate though the parties are in fact at ever so great a distance. And hence the rise of that distinction in *Apollonius τὰς μὲν τὴν ὄψεων εἶναι δεῖξεις, τὰς δὲ τοῦ νῦν, that some Indications are osular, and some are mental.* De Syntax, L. II.c. 3. p. 104.

*Greek ὅς, ὅγις;¹⁰ in Latin, *Qui*,; in English, *Who*, *Which*, *That*), a Pronoun having a character peculiar to itself, the nature of which may be explained as follows.*

SUPPOSE I was to say—**LIGHT** is a **Body**, **LIGHT** moves with great celerity. These would apparently be two distinct

¹⁰ The Greeks, it must be confess, call this Pronoun ὅντος ἀρθρόν, the *subjunctive Article*. Yet, as it should seem, this is but an improper appellation. *Apollonius*, when he compares it to the προακτικὸν or true *prepositive Article*, not only confesses it to differ, as being express by a different Word, and having a different place in every Sentence; but in Syntax he adds, *it is wholly different*. *De Syntax.* L. I. c. 43. p. 91. *Theodore Gaza* acknowledges the same, and therefore adds—ὅτε δὴ ἡ ἀ κρίσις ἀν τη ἀρθρον ταῦται—for these reasons this (examining the *Subjunctive*) cannot properly be an Article. And just before he says, κρίσις γε μὴν ἀρθρον τὸ προακτικόν—however, properly speaking, it is the *Prepositive* is the Article. *Gram. Introd.* L. IV. The Latins therefore have undoubtedly done better in ranging it with the Pronouns.

Sentences. Suppose, instead of the Second LIGHT, I were to place the prepositive Pronoun, IT, and say—*LIGHT is a Body*; *IT moves with great celerity*—the Sentence would still be distinct and two. But if I add a Connective (as for Example an AND) saying—*LIGHT is a Body, AND it moves with great celerity*—I then by Connection make the two into one, as by cementing many stones I make one Wall.

Now it is *in the united Powers of a Connective, and another Pronoun*, that we may see the force and character of the Pronoun here treated. Thus therefore, if in the place of AND IT, we substitute THAT, or WHICH, saying *LIGHT is a Body WHICH moves with great celerity*—the Sentence still retains its *Unity and Perfection*, and becomes if possible more compact than before. We may with just reason therefore call this Pronoun the **SUBJUNCTIVE**, because it cannot (like

the Prepositive) introduce an original Sentence, but only *serves to subjoin one to some other, which is previous.*^(*)

The Application of this SUBJUNCTIVE

^(*) Hence we see why the Pronoun here mentioned is always necessarily the Part of some *complex* Sentence, which Sentence contains, either express, or understood, two Verbs, and two Nominatives.

Thus in that Verse of *Horace.*

Qui metuens vivit, liber mihi non erit unquam.

Ille non erit liber—is one Sentence; *qui metuens vivit*—is another: *Ille* and *Qui* are the two Nominatives; *Erit* and *Vivit*, the two Verbs; and so in all other instances.

The following passage from *Apollonius* (though somewhat corrupt in more places than one) will serve to shew whence the above speculations are taken. Τὸ διπολακτικὸν ἄρθρον ἐπὶ ρῆμα ἴδιον φέρεται, συνδεδεμένὸν διὰ τῆς ἀναφορᾶς τῷ προκειμένῳ δινόματι· Ηὐ ἐντεῦθεν ἀπλῶν λόγον ὁ παρισάνει κατὰ τὴν τῶν δύο ρήμάτων σύνταξιν (Λέγω τὴν ἐν τῷ δινόματι, ηὐ τὴν ἐν αὐτῷ τῷ ἄρθρῳ) διπερ πάλιν παρείπετο τῷ ΚΑΙ συνδέσμῳ. Κοινὸν μὲν (lege ΤΟ ΚΑΙ γὰρ κοινὸν μὲν) ταρελάμβανε τὸ δύνομα τῷ προκειμένον, σύμπλεκον δὲ

like the other Pronouns, is universal. It may be the Substitute of all kinds of Substantives, natural, artificial, or abstract ; as well as general, special or particular. We

ἕτερον λόγον πάντως ἡ ἕτερον ρῆμα παρελάμβανε, η
ὅτι τὰ, ΠΑΡΕΓΕΝΕΤΟ Ο ΓΡΑΜΜΑΤΙΚΟΣ, ΟΣ ΔΙ-
ΕΛΕΞΑΤΟ, δονάμει τὸν αὐτὸν αποτελεῖ τὸ (fors. τῷ) Ο
ΓΡΑΜΜΑΤΙΚΟΣ ΠΑΡΕΓΕΝΕΤΟ, ΚΑΙ ΔΙΕΛΕΞΑΤΟ.
The subjunctive Article (that is, the Pronoun here mentioned) is applied to a Verb of its own, and yet is connected withal to the antecedent Noun. Hence it can never serve to constitute a simple Sentence, by reason of the Syntax of the two Verbs, I mean that which respects the Noun or Antecedent, and that which respects the Article or Relative. The same too follows as to the Conjunction, AND. This Copulative assumes the Antecedent Noun, which is capable of being applied to many Subjects, and by connecting to it a new Sentence, of necessity assumes a new Verb also. And hence it is that the Words—the Grammarian came who discoursed—form in power nearly the same sentence, as if we were to say—the Grammarian came AND discoursed. Apoll. de Syntaxi, L. I. c. 43. p. 92. See also an ingenious French Treatise, called Grammaire générale et raisonnée, Chap. IX.

The Latins, in their Structure of this Subjunctive, seem to have well represented its compound Nature of part Pronoun, and part Connective, in forming their qui et

may say, the *Animal*, *Which*, &c. the *Man*, *Whom*, &c. the *Ship*, *Which*, &c. *Alexander*, *Who*, &c. *Bucephalus*, *That*, &c. *Virtue*, *Which*, &c. &c.

NAY, it may even be the Substitute of all the other Pronouns, and is of course therefore expressive of all three Persons. Thus we say, I who now read, have near finished this Chapter; THOU, WHO now readest: HE, WHO now readeth, &c. &c.

AND thus is this SUBJUNCTIVE truly a *Pronoun* from its *Substitution*, there being no Substantive existing, in whose place it

QVIS from QUE and IS, or (if we go with Scaliger to the Greek) from KAI and 'OΣ, KAI and 'O. *Soc. de Gen. Ling. Lat.* c. 127.

HOMER also expresses the Force of this *Subjunctive Pronoun* or *Article*, by help of the *Prepositive* and a *Connective*, exactly consonant to the Theory here established. See *Iliad.* A. ver. 270, 553. N. 571. II. 54, 157, 158.

may not stand. At the same time, it is essentially distinguished from the other Pronouns, by this peculiar, that it is not only a *Substitute*, but withal a *Connective*.⁽ⁿ⁾

⁽ⁿ⁾ Before we quit this Subject, it may not be improper to remark, that in the *Greek* and *Latin* Tongues, the two principal Pronouns, that is to say, the First and Second Person, the *Ego* and the *Tu*, are implied in the very Form of the Verb itself (*γράφω γράφεις, scribo, scribis*) and are for that reason never express, unless it be to mark a Contradistinction; such as in *Virgil*,

*Nos patriam fugimus : Tu, Tityre, lensus in umbrā
Formosam resonare doceas, &c.*

This, however, is true with respect only to the *Casus rectus*, or *Nominative* of these Pronouns, but not with respect to their *oblique Cases*, which must always be added, because though we see the *Ego* in *Amo*, and the *Tu* in *Amas*, we see not the *Tu* or *Me* in *Amat* or *Amant*.

Yet even these *oblique Cases*, appear in a different manner, according as they mark Contradistinction, or not. If they contradistinguish, then are they *commonly* placed at the beginning of the Sentence, or at least before the Verb, or leading Substantive.

And now to conclude what we have said concerning Substantives. All SUBSTANTIVES are either *Primary*, or *Secondary*,

Thus *Virgil*,

— *Quid Theseia, magnum*
Quid memorem Alciden? Et mi genus ab Jove summo.

Thus *Homer*,

‘*YMIN μὲν θεοὶ δοῖεν* —————
Παῖδα δὲ ΜΟΙ λύσατε φίλην ————— ΙΛ. Α.

where the ‘*Yμῖν* and the *Μοὶ* stand, as contradistinguished, and both have precedence of their respective Verbs, the ‘*Yμῖν* even leading the whole Sentence. In other instances these Pronouns commonly take their place behind the Verb as may be seen in examples every where obvious. The Greek Language went farther still. When the oblique Case of these Pronouns happened to contradictinguish, they assumed a peculiar accent of their own, which gave them the name of ὀρθορονυμέναι, or *Pronouns uprightly accented*. When they marked no such opposition, they not only took their place behind the Verb, but even *gave it their accent*, and (as it were) *inclined themselves upon it*. And hence they acquired the name of Εγκλιτικά, that is, *Leaning* or *Inclining* Pronouns. The Greeks too had in the first person ‘*Εμῷ*, ‘*Εμοὶ*, ‘*Εμὲ*, for *Contradistinctives*, and *Μῷ*, *Μοὶ*, *Μὲ*, for *Enclitics*. And hence it was that *Apollonius* contended, that in the passage above quoted from the first Iliad, we should read παιδα δ ‘*EMOI*

that is to say, according to a Language more familiar and known, are either **Nouns** or **PRONOUNS**. The **Nouns** denote *Substances*, and those either *Natural*, *Artificial*, or *Abstract*.* They moreover denote Things either *General* or *Special* or *Particular*. The **PRONOUNS**, their Substitutes, are either *Prepositive*, or *Subjunctive*. THE **PREPOSITIVE** is distinguished into three Orders called the *First*, the *Second*, and the *Third* Person. THE **SUBJUNCTIVE**

for *ταῦδε δὲ ΜΟΙ*, on account of the Contradistinction which there occurs between the *Grecians* and *Chryses*. See *Apoll. de Syntaci. L. I. c. 3. p. 20. L. II. c. 2. p. 102, 103.*

This Diversity between the Contradistinctive Pronouns, and the Enclitic, is not unknown even to the *English* Tongue. When we say, *Give me Content*, the (*Me*) in this case is a perfect Enclitic. But when we say, *Give Me Content*, *Give Him his thousands*, the (*Me*) and (*Him*) are no Enclitics, but as they stand in opposition, assume an Accent of their own, and so become the true *δρθορονεύτιαι*.

* See before p. 87, 88.

includes the powers of all those three, having *superadded*, as of its own, the peculiar force of a *Connective*.

HAVING done with **S U B S T A N T I V E S**, we now proceed to **A T T R I B U T I V E S**.

CHAP. VI.

Concerning Attributives.

ATTRIBUTIVES are *all those principal Words, that denote Attributes, considered as Attributes.* Such for example are the Words, *Black, White, Great, Little, Wise, Eloquent, Writeth, Wrote, Writing, &c.*⁽⁴⁾

(4) In the above list of Words are included what Grammarians called *Adjectives, Verbs, and Participles*, in as much as *all of them equally denote the Attributes of Substance.* Hence it is, that as they are all from their very nature the Predicates in a Proposition (being all predicated of some Subject or Substance, *Snow is white, Cicero writeth &c.*) hence I say the Appellation PHMA or VERB is employed by Logicians in an extended Sense to denote them all. Thus Ammonius explaining the reason, why Aristotle in his Tract *de Interpretatione* calls λενκός a Verb, tells us πᾶσαν φωνὴν, κακηγορέμενον δρον ἐν προτάσει ποιῶσαν, 'PHMA καλεῖσθαι, that every Sound articulate, that forms

HOWEVER, previously to these, and to every other possible Attribute, whatever a thing may be, whether black or white, square or round, wise or eloquent, writing or thinking, it must *first* of necessity EXIST before it can possibly be any thing else. For EXISTENCE may be considered as *an universal Genus*, to which all things of all kinds are at all times to be referred. The Verbs therefore, which denote it, claim precedence of all others, as being essential to the very being of every Proposition, in which they may still be found, either *express*, or by *implication*; express, as when we say, *The Sun is bright*; by implication

the *Predicate in a Proposition is called a VERB*. p. 24. Edit. Ven. Priscian's observation, though made on another occasion, is very pertinent to the present. *Non Declinatio sed proprietas excutienda est significationis.* L. II. p. 576. And in another place he says:—*non similitudo declinationis omnimodo conjungit vel discernit partes orationis inter se, sed vis ipsius significationis.* L. XIII. p. 970.

as when we say, *The Sun rises*, which means, when resolved, *The Sun is rising*.^(b)

THE Verbs, *Is*, *Growtheth*, *Becometh*, *Est*, *Fit*, ὑπάρχει, ἐστι, τωέλει, γίγνεται, are all of them used to express this general Genus. The Latins have called them *Verba Substantiva*, *Verbs Substantive*, but the Greeks 'Ρήματα 'Υπαρχήμα, *Verbs of Existence*, a Name more apt, as being of greater latitude, and comprehending equally as well Attribute, as Substance. The principal of those Verbs, and which we shall here particularly consider, is the Verb, 'Εστι, *Est*, *Is*.

Now all existence is either absolute or qualified—*absolute*, as when we say, **B** is ; *qualified*, as when we say, **B** is **A N I M A L**; **B** is **BLACK**, **IS ROUND**, &c.

^(b) See *Metaphys. Aristot. L. V. c. 7. Edit. Du-Vall.*

WITH respect to this difference, the Verb (*is*) can by itself express *absolute Existence*, but never the *qualified*, without subjoining the particular Form, because the Forms of Existence being in number infinite, if the particular Form be not express, we cannot know which is intended. And hence it follows, that when (*is*) only serves to subjoin some such Form, it has little more force, than that of *a mere Assertion*. It is under the same character, that it becomes a latent part in every other Verb, by expressing that Assertion, which is one of their Essentials. Thus, as was observed just before, *Riseth*, means, *is rising*; *Writeth* *is writing*.

AGAIN—As to EXISTENCE in general, it is either *mutable* or *immutable*; *mutable*, as in the *Objects of Sensation*; *immutable* as in the *Objects of Intellec^tion and Science*. Now *mutable* Objects exist all in *Time*, and admit the several Distinctions of present,

past, and future. But *immutable Objects* know no such Distinctions, but rather stand opposed to all things temporary.

AND hence two different Significations of the substantive Verb (*is*) according as it denotes *mutable*, or *immutable* Being.

FOR example, if we say, *This Orange is ripe*, (*is*) meaneth that it existeth so now at this present, in opposition to past time, when it was green, and to future time when it will be rotten.

BUT if we say, *The Diameter of the Square is incommensurable with its side*, we do not intend by (*is*) that it is incommensurable now, having been formerly commensurable, or being to become so hereafter; on the contrary we intend that Perfection of Existence, to which Time and its Distinctions are utterly unknown. It is under the same meaning we employ this

Verb, when we say TRUTH is, or, GOD is. The opposition is not of *Time present* to other *Times*, but of *necessary Existence* to all *temporary Existence* whatever.^(v) And so much for *Verbs of Existence* commonly called *Verbs Substantive*.

We are now to descend to the common Herd of Attributives, such as *black* and *white*, *to write*, *to speak*, *to walk*, &c. among which when compared and opposed to each other, one of the most eminent distinctions appears to be this. Some, by being joined to a proper Substantive, *make* without

^(v) *Cum enim dicimus, Deus est, non cum dicimus NUNC ESSE, sed tantum IN SUBSTANTIA ESSE, ut hac ad immutabilitatem potius substantiae, quam ad tempus aliquod referatur. Si autem dicimus, DIES EST, ad nullam diei substantiam pertinet, nisi tantum ad temporis constitutionem; hoc enim, quod significat, tale est, tanquam si dicamus, NUNC EST. Quare cum dicimus ESSE, ut substantiam designemus, simpliciter EST addimus; cum vero ita ut aliquid praesens significetur, secundum Tempus.* Boeth. in Lib de Interpr. p. 307. See also Plat. Tim. p. 37, 38. Edit. Serrani.

further help a *perfect assertive Sentence*; while the rest, though otherwise perfect, are *in this respect* deficient.

To explain by an example. When we say, *Cicero eloquent*, *Cicero wise*, these are imperfect Sentences, though they denote a Substance and an Attribute. The reason is, that they want an *Assertion*, to shew that such Attribute appertains to such Substance. We must therefore call in the help of an Assertion elsewhere, an (*is*) or a (*was*) to complete the Sentence, saying, *Cicero is wise*, *Cicero was eloquent*. On the contrary, when we say, *Cicero writeth* *Cicero walketh*, in instances like these there is no such occasion, because the Words (*writeth*) and (*walketh*) imply in their own Form not an Attribute only, but an Assertion likewise. Hence it is they may be resolved, the one into *Is* and *Writing*, the other into *Is* and *Walking*.

Now all those Attributives, which have

this complex Power of denoting both an Attribute and an Assertion, make that Species of Words, which Grammarians call VERBS. If we resolve this complex Power into its distinct Parts, and take the *Attribute alone without the Assertion*, then have we PARTICIPLES. All other Attributives, besides the two Species before, are included together in the general Name of ADJECTIVES.

AND thus it is, that ALL ATTRIBUTIVES are either VERBS, PARTICIPLES, or ADJECTIVES.

BESIDES the Distinctions above mentioned, there are others, which deserve notice. Some Attributes have their Essence in *Motion*; such are *to walk*, *to fly*, *to strike*, *to live*. Others have it in the *privation of Motion*; such are *to stop*, *to rest*, *to cease*, *to die*. And lastly, others have it in subjects, *which have nothing to do with either motion or its Privation*; such are the

Attributes of Great and Little, White and Black, Wise and Foolish, and in a word the several Quantities and Qualities of all Things. Now these last are **ADJECTIVES**; those which denote *Motions*, or their *Privation* are either **VERBS** or **PARTICLES**.

AND this Circumstance leads to a further Distinction, which may be explained as follows. That *all Motion is in Time*, and therefore, wherever it exists, implies *Time* as its concomitant, is evident to all and requires no proving. But besides this, *all Rest or Privation of Motion implies Time likewise*. For how can a thing be said to rest or stop, by being in *one Place* for *one Instant only*?—so too is that thing, which moves with the greatest velocity. † To stop therefore or rest, is to be in *one Place* for *more than one instant*, that is to say,

† Thus Proclus in the Beginning of his Treatise concerning *Motion*: Ἡρεμὸν ἐσὶ τὸ πρότερον ἢ ὑπερον τὸ τῷ αὐτῷ τόπῳ διν, ἡ αὐτὸς, ἡ τὰ μέρη.

during an Extension between two Instants, and *this* of course gives us the Idea of TIME. As therefore *Motions* and their *Privation* imply *Time* as their concomitant, so *VERBS*, which denote them, come to denote *TIME* also.⁽⁴⁾ And hence the origin and use of *TENSES*, “which are so many different forms, assigned to each Verb, to shew, without altering its principal meaning, the various TIMES in which such meaning may exist.” Thus *Scribit*, *Scripsit*, *Scripserat*, and *Scribet*, denote all equally the Attribute, *To Write*, while the difference between them, is, that they denote *Writing in different Times*.

⁽⁴⁾ The antient Authors of Dialectic or Logic have well described this property. The following is part of their Definition of a Verb——ρῆμα δέ ἐστι τὸ προσημαῖνον χρόνον a Verb is something which signifies Time over AND ABOVE (for such is the force of the Proposition, Πρὸς.) If it should be asked, over and above what? It may be answered over and above its principal Signification, which is, to denote some moving and energizing Attribute. See Aristot. de Interpret. c. 3. together with his Commentators Ammonius and Boethius.

SHOULD it be asked, whether *Time* itself may not become upon occasion the Verb's *principal* Signification ; it is answered, No. And this appears, because *the same Time* may be denoted by different verbs (as in the words *writeth* and *speaketh*, and *different Times* by the same verb (as in the words, *writeth* and *wrote*), neither of which could happen, were *Time* any thing more than a mere *Concomitant*. Add to this, that when words denote *Time*, not collaterally, but principally, they cease to be verbs, and become either adjectives, or substantives. Of the adjective kind are *Timely*, *Yearly*, *Dayly*, *Hourly*, &c. of the substantive kind are *Time*, *Year*, *Day*, *Hour*; &c.

THE most obvious division of *TIME* is into Present, Past, and Future, nor is any language complete, whose verbs have not *TENSES*, to mark these distinctions. But we may go still farther. Time past and

future are both *infinitely* extended. Hence it is that in *universal Time past*, we may assume *many particular Times past*, and in *universal Time future*, *many particular Times future*, some more, some less, remote and corresponding to each other under different relations. Even *present Time itself* is not exempt from these differences, and as necessarily implies *some degree of Extension*, as does every given line, however minute.

HERE then we are to seek for the reason, which first introduced into language that variety of Tenses. It was not, it seems, enough to denote *indefinitely* (or by Aorists) mere Present, Past, or Future, but it was necessary on many occasions to define with more precision, *what kind* of Past, Present, or Future. And hence the multiplicity of Futures, Præterits, and even Present Tenses, with which all languages are found to abound, and without

which it would be difficult to ascertain our Ideas.

HOWEVER as the knowledge of TENSES depends on the theory of TIME, and this is a subject of no mean speculation, we shall reserve it by itself for the following chapter.

CHAP. VII.

Concerning Time, and Tenses.

TIME and SPACE have this in common, that they are both of them by nature things *continuous*, and as such they both of them imply *Extension*. Thus between *London* and *Salisbury* there is the Extension of Space, and between *Yesterday* and *To-morrow*, the Extension of Time. But in this they differ, that all the parts of Space exist *at once* and *together*, while those of Time only exist *in Transition or Succession*.^(a) Hence then we may gain some Idea of TIME, by considering it under the

^(a) See Vol. I. p. 275. Note XIII. To which we may add, what is said by *Ammonius*—οὐδὲ γὰρ ὁ χρόνος δῆλος ἄμα ὑφίσταται, ἀλλ' η κατὰ μόνον τὸ ΝΥΝ· ἐν γὰρ τῷ γίνεσθαι ἡ φθίνεσθαι τὸ εἶναι ἔχει. TIME doth not subsist the whole at once, but only in a single Now or INSTANT; for it hath its Existence in becoming and in ceasing to be. Amm. in Predicam. p. 82. b.

notion of a *transient Continuity*. Hence also, as far as the affections and properties of *Transition* go, Time is *different* from Space; but as to those of *Extension* and *Continuity*, they perfectly coincide.

LET us take, for example, such a part of Space, as a Line. In every given Line we may assume any where a *Point*, and therefore in every given Line there may be assumed infinite Points. So in every given Time we may assume any where a *Now* or *Instant*, and therefore in every given Time there may be assumed infinite *Nows* or *Instants*.

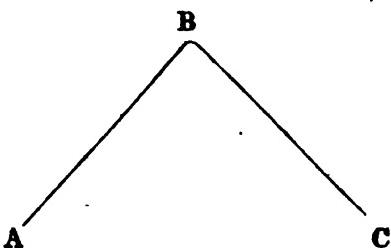
FARTHER still—A *Point* is the *Bound* of every finite Line; and a *Now* or *Instant*, of every finite Time. But although they are *Bounds*, they are neither of them *Parts*, neither the *Point* of any Line, nor the *Now* or *Instant* of any Time. If this appear strange, we may remember, that the *parts* of any thing *extended* are neces-

sarily extended also, it being essential to their character, *that they should measure their Whole*. But if a *Point* or *Now* were extended, each of them would contain within itself *infinite other Points*, and *infinite other Nows* (for these may be assumed infinitely within the minutest Extension) and this, it is evident, would be absurd and impossible.

THESE assertions therefore being admitted, and both *Points* and *Nows* being taken as *Bounds*, but not as *Parts*,⁽¹⁾ it will follow, that in the same manner as the

⁽¹⁾—φαντρὸν ὅτι ὁδὲ μόριον τὸ ΝΥΝ τῷ χρόνῳ, ὡσπερ
ἴδιον εἴγματα τῆς γραμμῆς· εἰ δὲ γραμματίδιον τῆς μίας
μόρια. It is evident that a Now or Instant is no more a
part of Time, than Points are of a Line. The parts
indeed of one Line are two other Lines. Natur. Anas. L.
IV. c. 17. And not long before—Τὸ δὲ ΝΥΝ ἐστὶ μέρος
μηρέως, τε γὰρ τὸ μέρος, οὐ σύγκεισθαι δεῖ τὸ δλον ἐκ τῶν
μερῶν δὲ ΧΡΟΝΟΣ ἐστι δοκεῖ σύγκεισθαι ἐκ τῶν ΝΥΝ.
A Now is no Part of Time; for a Part is able to measure
its Whole, and the Whole is necessarily made up of its
Parts; but TIME doth not appear to be made up of Nows
Ibid. c. 14.

same Point may be the *End* of one Line, and the *Beginning* of another, so the *same Now* or *Instant* may be the *End* of one Time and the *Beginning* of another. Let us suppose, for example, the Lines, A B, B C.



I say that the Point B, is the End of the Line AB, and the Beginning of the Line BC. In the same manner let us suppose AB, BC, to represent certain Times, and let B be a *Now* or *Instant*. In such case I say that the *Instant* B is the End of the Time AB, and the Beginning of the Time BC. I say likewise of these two Times, that with respect to the *Now* or *Instant*, which they include, the first of them is necessarily PAST TIME, as being *previous* to it; the other is necessarily FUTURE, as being *subsequent*. As therefore every Now

or *Instant* always exists in Time, and without being Time, is *Time's Bound*; the Bound of *Completion* to the *Past*, and the Bound of *Commencement* to the *Future*; from hence we may conceive its nature or end, which is, *to be the medium of Continuity between the Past and the Future, so as to render Time, thro' all its Parts, one Intire and Perfect Whole.*^(*)

FROM the above speculations, there follow some conclusions, which may be perhaps called paradoxes, till they have been attentively considered. In the first place *there cannot* (strictly speaking *be any*

^(*) Τὸ δὲ ΝΥΝ ἔτι συνέχεια χρόνῳ, ὥσπερ ἐλέχθη. συνέχει γὰρ τὸν χρόνον, τὸν παρελθόντα ἢ ἐσόμενον, ἢ δλῶς πέρας χρόνου ἔτιν ἔτι γὰρ τῇ μὲν ἀρχῇ, τῇ δὲ τελευτῇ. A *Now* or *Instant* is (*as was said before*) the *Continuity or holding together of Time*; *for it makes Time continuous, the past and the future, and is in general its boundary, as being the beginning of one Time and the ending of another.* Natur. Auscult. L. IV. c. 19. Συνέχεια in this place means not *Continuity*, as standing for *Extension*, but rather that *Junction* or *Holding together*, by which *Extension* is imparted to other things.

such thing as Time present. For if all Time be transient as well as continuous, it cannot like a Line be present all together, but part will necessarily be gone, and part be coming. If therefore any portion of its continuity were to be present *at once*, it would so far quit its *transient* nature, and be *Time* no longer. But if no portion of its continuity can be thus present, how can *Time* possibly be *present*, to which such Continuity is essential?

FARTHER than this—If there be no such thing as *Time Present*, there can be no *Sensation of Time* by any one of the senses. For ALL SENSATION is of the *Present only, the Past being preserved not by Sense but by *Memory*, and the Future being anticipated by *Prudence* only and wise *Foresight*.

* Ταῦτη γὰρ (αἰσθῆσει sc.) οὔτε τὸ μέλλον, οὔτε τὸ γεγονόμενον γνωρίζομεν, ἀλλὰ τὸ παρόν μόνον. Αρις. περὶ Μνημ. A. a.

BUT if *no Portion* of Time be the object of *any Sensation*; farther, if the Present *never exist*; if the Past be *no more*, if the Future be not *as yet*; and if these are all the parts, out of which TIME is compounded: how strange and shadowy a Being do we find it? How nearly approaching to a perfect Non-entity.⁴⁴ Let us try however, since the senses fail us, if we have not faculties of higher power, to seize this fleeting Being.

⁴⁴ Οτι μὲν ὃν δλως ἔκ ἔτειν, οὐ μόγις ἐ ἀμυδρῶς, ἐκ τῶν δέ τις ἀν ὑποπτεύσεις τὸ μὲν γὰρ αὐτῷ γέγονε, καὶ ἔκ ἔτειν τὸ δὲ μέλλει, οὐ διτο ἔτειν· ἐκ δὲ τέτων ἐ δ ἀπειρος· καὶ δ ἀπειρος λαμβανόμενος χρόνος σύγκειται· τὸ δὲ ἐκ μὴ δητῶν συγκείμενον, ἀδύνατον ἀν δόξεις κατέχειν ποτὲ ἁστα.

That therefore TIME exists not at all, or at least has but a faint and obscure existence, one may suspect from hence: A part of it has been, and is no more; a part of it is coming and is not as yet; and out of these is made that infinite Time, which is ever to be assumed still farther and farther. Now that which is made up of nothing but Non-entities, it should seem was impossible ever to participate of Entity. Natural. Ausc. L. IV. c. 14. See also Philop. M. S. Com. in Nicomach. p. 10.

THE World has been likened to a variety of Things, but it appears to resemble no one more, than some moving spectacle (such as a procession or a triumph) that abounds in every part with splendid objects, some of which are still departing, as fast as others make their appearance. The Senses look on, while the sight passes, perceiving as much as is *immediately present*, which they report *with tolerable accuracy* to the Soul's superior powers. Having done this, they have done their duty, being concerned with nothing, save what is present and instantaneous. But to the *Memory*, to the *Imagination*, and above all to the *Intellect*, these several *Nows* or *Instants* are not lost, as to the *Senses*, but are preserved and made objects of *steady* comprehension, however in their own nature they may be *transitory* and *passing*. “ Now it is from contemplating two or more of these Instants under one view, together with that Interval of Continuity, which subsists between them

“ that we acquire insensibly the Idea of
“ TIME.”^(*) For example *The Sun rises;*

^(*) Τότε φαμὲν γεγονέναι χρόνον, δταν τὸ προτέρω δὲ
υτέρω ἐν τῷ κινήσει αἰσθησιν λάβωμεν. Ὁρίζομεν δὲ τῷ
ἄλλῳ δὲ ἄλλῳ ὑπολαβεῖν αὐτὰ, δὲ μεταξύ τι αὐτῶν ἔτερον
δταν γὰρ τὰ ἄκρα ἔτερα τὸ μέσον νοήσωμεν, δὲ δύο εἴπη ἡ
ψυχὴ τὰ ΝΥΝ, τὸ μὲν πρότερον, τὸ δὲ ὕστερον, τότε δὲ
τοῦτο φαμὲν εἶναι ΧΡΟΝΟΝ. *It is then we say there has*
been TIME, when we can acquire a Sensation of prior and
subsequent in Motion. But we distinguish and settle these
two, by considering one first, then the other, together with
an interval between them different from both. For as often
as we conceive the Extremes to be different from the Mean,
and the Soul talks of two Nows, one prior and the other sub-
sequent, then it is we say there is TIME, and this it is we call
TIME. Natural. Auscult. L. IV. c. 16. Themistius's Com-
ment upon this passage is to the same purpose. Ὄταν γὰρ δὲ
νῦν ἀναμνησθεὶς τὸ ΝΥΝ, δὲ χθὲς εἴπεν ἔτερον πᾶλιν εἴπη τὸ
τῆμερον, τότε δὲ χρόνον εὑθὺς ἐνενόησεν, ὑπὸ τῶν δύο ΝΥΝ
δριζόμενον, οἷον ὑπὸ περάτων δυοῖν δὲ ἦτω λέγειν ἔχει,
ὅτι ποσὸν ἐστι πεντεκαλδεκα ὥρων, η ἵκκαλδεκα, οἷον ἐξ ἀπέρρη
γραμμῆς πηχυαίαν δύο σημεῖοις ἀπορευνόμενος. *For when*
the Mind, remembering the Now, which it talked of yesterday,
talks again of another Now to-day, then it is it immedi-
ately has an idea of TIME, terminated by these two Nows,
as by two Boundaries; and thus is it enabled to say, that
the Quantity is of fifteen, or of sixteen hours, as if it were
to sever a Cubit's length from an infinite Line by two
Points. Themist. Op. Edit. Aldi. p. 45. b.

this I remember ; *it rises again* ; this too I remember. These Events are not together ; there is an *Extension* between them—not however of *Space*, for we may suppose the place of rising the same, or at least to exhibit no sensible difference. Yet still we recognize *some Extension* between them. Now what is this Extension, *but a natural Day*? And what is that, *but pure Time*? It is after the same manner, by recognizing two new Moons, and the Extension between these : two vernal Equinoxes, and the Extension between these ; that we gain Ideas of other Times, such as *Months* and *Years*; which are all so many Intervals, described as above ; that is to say, *passing Intervals of Continuity between two Instants viewed together*.

AND thus it is, THE MIND acquires the Idea of TIME. But this Time it must be remembered is PAST TIME ONLY, which is always the *first Species* that occurs to the human intellect. How then do we

acquire the Idea of TIME FUTURE? The answer is, we acquire it by *Anticipation*. Should it be demanded still farther, *And what is Anticipation?* We answer, that in this case it is a kind of reasoning by analogy from similar to similar ; from successions of events, that are past already, to similar successions, that are presumed hereafter. For example : I observe as far back as my memory can carry me, how every day has been succeeded by a night ; that night by another day ; that day by another night ; and so downwards in order to the Day that is now. Hence then I *anticipate a similar succession* from the present Day, and thus gain the Idea of days and nights *in futurity*. After the same manner, by attending to the periodical returns of New and Full Moons ; of Springs, Summers, Autumns and Winters, all of which in Time past I find never to have failed, I *anticipate a like orderly and diversified succession*, which makes Months, and Seasons, and Years, *in Time future*.

We go farther than this, and not only thus anticipate in these *natural* Periods, but even in matters of *human* and *civil* concern. For example: Having observed in many past instances how health had succeeded to exercise, and sickness to sloth; we anticipate *future* health to those, who, being *now* sickly use exercise; and *future* sickness to those, who, being *now* healthy, are slothful. It is a variety of such observations, all respecting one subject, which when systematized by just reasoning and made habitual by due practice, form the character of a Master-Artist, or Man of *practical* Wisdom. If they respect the human body (as above) they form the Physician; if matters military, the General; if matters national, the Statesman; if matters of private life, the Moralist; and the same in other subjects. All these several characters in their respective ways may be said to possess a kind of prophetic discernment, which not only presents them the

barren prospect of futurity (or prospect not hid from the meanest of men) but shews withal those events, which are likely to attend it, and thus enables them to act with superior certainty and rectitude. And hence it is, that (if we except those, who have had diviner assistances) we may justly say, as was said of old,

He's the best Prophet who conjectures well.⁽¹⁾

⁽¹⁾ Μάντις δὲ ἀριστος, δεις εἰκάζει καλῶς.

So Milton.

*Till old Experience do attain
To something like Prophetic Strain.*

*Et facile existimari potest, Prudentiam esse quodammodo
Divinationem.* Corn. Nep. in Vit. Attici.

There is nothing appears so clearly an object of the MIND or INTELLECT ONLY, as the Future does, since we can find no place for its existence any where else. Not but the same, if we consider, is equally true of the Past, For tho' it may have once had another kind of being, when (according to common Phrase) *it actually was*, yet was it then something Present, and not something Past. As Past, it has no existence but in THE MIND or MEMORY, since had it in fact any other, it could not properly be called Past. It was this intimate connection between TIME, and the SOUL, that made some Philosophers doubt, whether if there

FROM what has been reasoned it appears that knowledge of *the Future* comes from knowledge of *the Past*; as does knowledge of *the Past* from knowledge of *the Present*, so that their *Order to us* is that of PRESENT PAST, and FUTURE.

OF these Species of knowledge, that of the *Present* is the lowest, not only as *first in perception*, but as far the more extensive, being necessarily common to all *animal* Beings, and reaching even to Zoophytes, as far as they possess *Sensation*. Knowledge of *the Past* comes next, which is superior

was no Soul, there could be any Time, since Time appears to have its Being in no other region. Πότερον δὲ μὴ σοὶς ψυχῆς εἴη ἀν δ χρόνος, ἀπορήσειν ἄν τις, κ. τ. λ. Natur. Auscult. L. IV. c. 20. *Themistius*, who comments the above passage, expresses himself more positively. Εἰ τοίνυν διχῶς λέγεται τότε ἀριθμητὸν ἢ τὸ ἀριθμένον, τὸ μὲν τὸ ἀριθμητὸν δηλαδὴ δυνάμει, τὸ δὲ ἐνεργείᾳ, ταῦτα δὲ ὡς ἀν ὑποέαν, μὴ ὅντος τῷ ἀριθμήσοντος μήτε δυνάμει μήτε ἐνεργείᾳ, φανερὸν ὡς οὐκ ἀν δ χρόνος εἴη, μὴ σοὶς ψυχῆς. Them. p. 48. Edit. Aldi. Vid. etiam ejusd. Comm. in Lib. de An. p. 94.

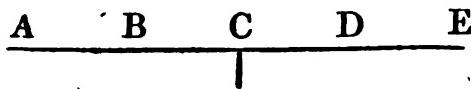
to the *former*, as being confined to those animals, that have *Memory* as well as *Senses*. Knowledge of the *Future* comes last, as being derived from the other two, and which is for that reason *the most excellent* as well as *the most rare*, since Nature in her super-additions rises from worse always to better, and is never found to sink from better down to worse.*

AND now having seen how we acquire the knowledge of *Time past*, and *Time future*; which is first in perception, which first in dignity; which more common, which more rare; let us compare them both to *the present Now* or *Instant*, and examine what relations they maintain towards it.

IN the first place there may be *Times* both *past* and *future*, in which the *present Now* has no existence, as for example in *Yesterday*, and *To-morrow*.

* See below, note (r) of this chapter.

AGAIN, *the present Now* may so far belong to *Time* of either sort, as to be *the End* of the past, and *the Beginning* of the future; but it cannot be included *within* the limits of either. For if it were possible let us suppose C the *present Now* included



within the limits of the *past Time* AD. In such case CD, part of the past Time AD, will be subsequent to C the *present Now*, and so of course be *future*. But by the Hypothesis it is *past*, and so will be both Past and Future at once, which is absurd. In the same manner we prove that C cannot be included within the limits of a *future Time*, such as BE.

WHAT then shall we say of such *Times*, as *this Day*, *this Month*, *this Year*, *this*

Century, all which include within them *the present Now*? They cannot be *past Times* or *future*, from what has been proved ; and *present Time has no existence*, as has been proved likewise.* Or shall we allow them to be present, *from the present Now, which exists between them* : so that from the presence of *that* we call *these* also present, tho' the shortest among them has infinite parts always absent? If so, and in conformity to custom we allow such *Times present*, as present Days, Months, Years, and Centuries, each must of necessity be *a compound of the Past and of the Future*, divided from each other by some present Now or Instant, and *jointly called PRESENT; while that Now remains within them*. Let us suppose for example the Time XY, which

X A B C D E Y
f.. ————— . . g

* Sup. p. 104.

let us call a Day, or a Century; and let the present *Now* or *Instant* exist at A. I say, in as much as A exists within XY, that therefore XA is Time past, and AY Time future, and the whole XA,AY, *Time present*. The same holds if we suppose the present Now to exist at B, or C, or D, or E, or any where before Y. When the present Now exists at Y, then is the whole XY *Time past*, and still more so when the Now gets to g, or onwards. In like manner before the Present Now entered X, as for example when it was at f, then was the whole XY *Time future*; it was the same, when the present Now was at X. When it had past that, then XY became *Time present*. And thus it is, that TIME is PRESENT, while passing, in its PRESENT Now or INSTANT. It is the same indeed here, as it is in Space. A Sphere passing over a Plane, and being for that reason present to it, is only present to that Plane *in a single Point at once*.

while during the whole progression its parts absent are infinite.^(e)

From what has been said, we may perceive that ALL TIME, *of every denomination*

(e) PLACE, according to the antients, was either mediate or immediate. I am (for example) in *Europe*, because I am in *England*; in *England*, because in *Wiltshire*; in *Wiltshire*, because in *Salisbury*; in *Salisbury*, because in *my own house*; in *my own house*, because in *my study*. Thus far MEDIA TE PLACE. And what is my IMMEDIATE PLACE? It is the internal Bound of that containing Body (whatever it be) which co-incides with the external Bound of my own Body. Τὸ περιέχοντος πέρας, καὶ δὲ περιέχει τὸ περιέχομενον. Now as this immediate Place is included within the limits of all the former Places, it is from this relation that those mediate Places also are called each of them *my Place*, tho' the least among them so far exceed my magnitude. To apply this to TIME. The Present Century is present in the present Year; that, in the present Month; that, in the present Day; that, in the present Hour; that; in the present Minute. It is thus by circumscription within circumscription that we arrive at THAT REAL AND INDIVISIBLE INSTANT which by being itself the very Essence of the Present, diffuses PRESENCE throughout all even the largest of Times, which are found to in-

is divisible and extended. But if so, then whenever we suppose a *definite Time*, even though it be a *Time present*, it must needs have a *Beginning*, a *Middle* and an *End*. And so much for **TIME**.

Now from the above doctrine of **TIME**, we propose by way of Hypothesis the following Theory of **TENSES**.

THE **TENSES** are used to mark Present, Past, and Future Time, either *indefinitely* without reference to any Beginning, Middle,

clude it within their respective limits. Nicephorus Blennides speaks much to the same purpose. Ἐνετάς ἦν χρόνος οὗτος δὲ φέρει ἐπάκτερα παρακείμενος τῷ κυρίως ΝΥΝ χρόνος μερικὸς, ἐκ παρεληλυθότος ἢ μελλοντος συνεπώς, ἢ διὰ τὴν πρὸς τὸ κυρίως ΝΥΝ γειτνίασιν, ΝΥΝ λεγόμενος ἢ αὐτός. PRESENT TIME therefore is that which adjoins to the REAL Now or INSTANT on either side, being a limited Time made up of Past and Future, and from its vicinity to that REAL Now said to be Now also itself. Ἐπιτ. φυσικῆς Κεφ. θ'. See also Arist. *Physic.* L. VI. c. 2, 3, &c.

or End ; or else *definitely*, in reference to such distinctions.

If *indefinitely*, then have we THREE TENSES, an Aorist of the Present, an Aorist of the Past, and an Aorist of the Future. If *definitely*, then have we three Tenses to mark the *Beginnings* of these three Times ; three to denote their *Middles* ; and three to denote their *Ends* ; in all NINE.

THE three first of these Tenses we call the Inceptive Present, the Inceptive Past, and the Inceptive Future. The three next, the Middle Present, the Middle Past, and the Middle Future. And the three last, the Completive Present, the Completive Past, and the Completive Future.

AND thus it is, that the TENSES in their natural number appear to be TWELVE ;

three to denote Time absolute, and nine to denote it under its respective distinctions.

Aorist of the Present.

Γράφω. *Scribo.* I write.

Aorist of the Past.

Ἐγράψα. *Scripsi.* I wrote.

Aorist of the Future.

Γράψω. *Scribam.* I shall write.

Inceptive Present.

Μέλλω γράψειν. *Scripturus sum.* I am going to write.

Middle or Extended Present.

Τυγχάνω γράφων. *Scribo or Scribens sum*
I am writing.

Compleutive Present.

Γέγραφα. *Scripsi.* I have written.

Inceptive Past.

Ἐμελλον γράψειν. *Scripturus eram.* I was beginning to write.

Middle or extended Past:

Ἐγράφοι or ἐτύχανοι γράφων. *Scribebam.*
I was writing.

Compleutive Past.

Ἐγεγράφεν. *Scripseram.* I had done
writing.

Inceptive Future.

Μελλίσω γράφεν. *Scripturus ero.* I
shall be beginning to write,

Middle or extended Future.

Ἐσομαι γράφων. *Scribens ero.* I shall
be writing.

Compleutive Future.

Ἐσομαι γεγραφώς. *Scripsero.* I shall
have done writing.

IT is not to be expected that the above Hypothesis should be justified through all instances in every language. It fares with

Tenses, as with other affections of speech ; be the Language upon the whole ever so perfect, much must be left, in defiance of all analogy, to the harsh laws of mere authority and chance.

It may not however be improper to inquire, what traces may be discovered in favour of this system, either in languages themselves, or in those authors who have written upon this part of Grammar, or lastly, in the nature and reason of things.

IN the first place as to Aorists. *Aorists* are usually by Grammarians referred to the *Past* : such are *ἠλθον*, *I went* ; *επεσσον*, *I fell* &c. We seldom hear of them in the *Future*, and more rarely still in the *Present*. Yet it seems agreeable to reason, that wherever Time is signified without any further circumscription, than that of Simple

present, past or future, the Tense is AN AORIST.

Thus Milton.

*Millions of spiritual creatures WALK the earth
Unseen, both when we wake, and when we sleep.*

P. L. IV. 277.

Here the verb (**WALK**) means not that they were walking *at that instant only, when Adam spoke*, but ἀορίσως *indefinitely*, take any instant whatever. So when the same author calls *Hypocrisy*,

*—the only Evil, that WALKS
Invisible, except to God alone,*

the Verb (**WALKS**) hath the like *aoristical or indefinite application*. The same may be said in general of all Sentences of the *Gnomologic* kind, such as

*Ad paenitendum PROPERAT, cito qui judicat.
Avarus, nisi cum moritur, nil recte FACIT, &c.*

ALL these Tenses are so many AORISTS
OF THE PRESENT.

Gnomologic Sentences after the same
manner make likewise AORISTS OF THE
FUTURE.

Tu nihil ADMITTES in te, formidine pene

Hor.

So too *Legislative* Sentences, *Thou SHALT not kill, Thou SHALT not steal, &c.* for this means no one *particular* future Time, but is a prohibition extended *indefinitely* to every part of Time future.⁽¹⁾

⁽¹⁾ The Latin Tongue, appears to be more than ordinarily deficient, as to the article of *Aorists*. It has no peculiar form even for an *Aorist of the Past*, and therefore (as *Priscian* tells us) the *Præteritum* is forced to do the double duty both of *that Aorist*, and of the *perfect Present*, its application in particular instances being to be gathered from the Context. Thus it is that *FECI* means (as the same author informs us) both *πενοίηκα* and *ἐποίησα*, *I have*

WE pass from *Aorists*, to THE INCEPTIVE TENSES.

THESE may be found in part supplied (like many other Tenses) by verbs auxiliar, ΜΕΛΛΩ γράφεν, *Scripturus sum. I am going to write.* But the *Latins* go farther, and have a species of Verbs, derived from others, which do the duty of these Tenses and are themselves for that reason called *Inchoatives* or *Inceptives*. Thus from *Caléo*, *I am warm*, comes *Calesco*, *I begin to grow warm*; from *Tumeo*, *I swell*, comes *Tumesco*, *I begin to swell*. These *Inchoative* Verbs are so peculiarly appropriated to the *Beginnings* of Time, that they are defective as to all Tenses, which denote it in its *Completion*, and therefore have neither *Perfectum*, *Plusquam-perfectum*, or *Per-*

done it, and I did it; VIDI both ἤώπακα and εἶδον I have just seen it, and I saw it once. Prisc. Gram. L. VIII. p. 814, 888. Edit. Putsch.

fect Future. There is likewise a species of Verbs called in Greek Ἐφετικὰ, in Latin *Desiderativa*, the *Desideratives* or *Meditatives*, which if they are not strictly *Inceptives*, yet both in Greek and Latin have a near affinity with them. Such are πολεμησεῖω, *Bellaturio* *I have a desire to make war*; βρωσεῖω, *Esurio*, *I long to eat.*^(*) And so much for THE INCEPTIVE TENSES.

THE two last orders of Tenses which remain, are those we called^(*) THE MIDDLE TENSES (which express Time as ex-

^(*) As all *Beginnings* have reference to what is *future*, hence we see how properly these Verbs are formed, the Greek ones from a future Verb, the Latin from a future Participle. From πολεμήσο and βρώσω come πολεμησέω and βρωσείω; from *Bellatus* and *Esurus* come *Bellatario* and *Esurio*. See *Macrobius*, p. 691. Ed. Var. ὃ πάνυ γέ με νῦν δὴ ΓΕΛΑΣΕΙΟΝΤΑ ἐποίησας γελάσαι. Plato in *Phædone*.

^(*) Care must be taken not to confound these *middle* Tenses with the Tenses of those Verbs, which bear the same name among Grammarians.

tended and passing) and the **PERFECT** or **COMPLETIVE**, which express its *Completion* or *End*.

Now for these the authorities are many. They have been acknowledged already in the ingenious Accidence of Mr. *Hoadly*, and explained and confirmed by Dr. *Samuel Clarke*, in his rational edition of *Homer's Iliad*. Nay, long before either of these we find the same scheme in *Scaliger* and by him¹⁰ ascribed to †*Grocinus*, as its

¹⁰ *Ex his percipimus Grocinum acutè admodum Tempora divisisse, sed minus commodè. Tria enim constituit, ut nos, sed qua bifarium secat, Perfectum, et Imperfectum: sic, Præteritum imperfectum, Amabam: Præteritum perfectum Amaveram. Recè sandè. Et Præsens imperfectum, Amo. Recè hactenus; continuat enim amorem, neque absolvit. At Præsens perfectum, Amavi: quis hoc dicat?—De Futuro autem ut non male sentiū, ita controversum est. Futurum, inquit, imperfectum, Amabo: Perfectum, Amavero. Non male, inquam: significat enim Amavero, amorem futurum et absolutumiri: Amabo perfectionem nullam indicat. De Caus. Ling. Lat. c. 118.*

† His name was *William Grocian*, an *Englishman*, con-

author. The learned *Gaza* (who was himself a *Greek*, and one of the ablest restorers of that language in the western world) characterizes the Tenses in nearly the same manner.^(m) What *Apollonius* hints, is exactly consonant.⁽ⁿ⁾ *Priscian*, too, advances the

temporary with *Erasmus*, and celebrated for his learning. He went to *Florence* to study under *Landin*, and was Professor at *Oxford*. *Spec. Lit. Flor.* p. 205.

^(m) The PRESENT TENSE (as this author informs us in his excellent Grammar) denotes τὸ ἐνεπάμενον η̄ ἀτελὲς *that which is now Instant and incomplete*; THE PERFECTUM τὸ παρεληλυθὸς ἄρτι, η̄ ἐντελὲς τὸ ἐνετῶτος, *that which is now immediately past, and is the Completion of the Present*; THE IMPERFECTUM, τὸ παρεταταμένον η̄ ἀτελὲς τὸ παρφημένο, *the extended and incomplete part of the Past*; and the PLUSQUAM-PERFECTUM, τὸ παρεληλυθὸς πάλαι, η̄ ἐντελὲς τὸ παρακείμενο, *that which is past long ago, and is the completion of the præteritum*. Gram. L. IV.

⁽ⁿ⁾ Ἐντεῦθεν δὲ πειθόμεθα, διὰ ό παρφημένος συντέλειαν σημαίνει ό παρακείμενος, τήν γε μὴν ἐνετῶσαν—Hence we are persuaded that the Perfectum doth not signify the completion of the Past, but PRESENT COMPLETION. *Apollon.* L. III. c. 6. The Reason, which persuaded him to this opinion, was the application and use of the Particle ἀν, of which he was then treating, and which, as it denoted Potentiality or Contingence, would assort (he says) with any of the passing, extended, and incomplete Tenses, but

same doctrine from the *Stoicks*, whose authority we esteem greater than all the rest, not only from the more early age when they lived, but from their superior skill in Philosophy, and their peculiar attachment to *Dialectic*, which naturally led them to great accuracy in these *Grammatical Speculations*.^(o)

never with this **PERFECTUM**, because this implied such a *complete and indefeasible existence*, as never to be qualified into the nature of a *Contingent*.

^(o) By these Philosophers the *vulgar present Tense* was called **THE *I*MPEREFECT *PRESENT***, and the *vulgar Præteritum*, **THE *PERFECT *PRESENT****, than which nothing can be more consonant to the system that we favour. But let us hear *Priscian*, from whom we learn these facts—**PRAESENS TEMPUS** *proprie dicitur, cuius pars jam præteruit, pars futura est.* *Cum enim Tempus, fluvii more, instabili volvatur cursu, vix punctum habere potest in præsenti, hoc est, in instanti.* *Maxima igitur pars ejus (sicut dictum est) vel præteruit vel futura est.* *Unde STOICI jure HOC TEMPUS PRÆSENS etiam IMPERFECTUM vocabant (ut dictum est) eo quod prior ejus pars, qua præteruit, transacta est, deest autem sequens, id est, futura.* *Ut si in medio versu dicam scribo versum, priore ejus parte scripta; cui adhuc deest extrema pars, præsenti utor verbo, dicendo, scribo versum: sed IMPERFECTUM est, quod deest adhuc versui, quod scribatur—Ex eodem igitur Præsenti nascitur etiam*

BEFORE we conclude, we shall add a few miscellaneous observations, which will be more easily intelligible from the hypothesis here advanced, and serve withal to confirm its truth.

AND first, the *Latins* used their *Præteritum Perfectum* in some instances after a very peculiar manner, so as to imply the very reverse of the verb in its natural signification. Thus, *VIXIT*, signified, IS DEAD; *FUIT*, signified, NOW IS NOT, IS NO MORE. It was in this sense that *Cicero* addressed the people of *Rome*, when he had put to death the leaders in the *Catalinarian Conspiracy*. He appeared in the

Perfectum. Si enim ad finem perveniat incepsum, statim utimur PRÆTERITO PERFECTO; continuo enim, scripto ad finem versu, dico, scripsi versum.—And soon after speaking of the *Latīn Perfectum*, he says—*sciendum tamen, quod Romani PRÆTERITO PERFECTO non solum in re modo completa utuntur, (in quo vim habet ejus, qui apud Græcos παρακείμενος vocatur, quem STOICI ΤΕΛΕΙΟΝ EΝΕΣΤΩΤΑ nominaverunt) sed etiam pro Aoplēs accipitur, &c.*
Lib. VIII. p. 812, 813, 814.

Forum, and cried out with a loud voice,

***VIXERUNT.**—So **VIRGIL**,

—† *Fuimus Troes, fuit Ilium et ingens
Gloria Dardanidum* — **Æn.** II.

And again,

—*Locus Ardea quondam*

* So among the *Romans*, when in a Cause all the Pleaders had spoken, the Cryer used to proclaim **DIXERUNT**, i. e. *they have done speaking*. Ascon. Pæd. in Verr. II.

† So *Tibullus* speaking of certain *Prodigies* and evil Omens.

*Hæc fuerint olim. Sed tu, jam mitis, Apollo,
Prodigia indomitæ merge sub æquoribus.*

Eleg. II. 5. ver. 19.

Let these events HAVE BEEN in days of old;—by Implication therefore—But HENCEFORTH let them be no more.

So *Æneas* in *Virgil* prays to *Phœbus*.

Hac Trojanæ tenus fuerit fortuna secuta.

Let Trojan Fortune (that is, adverse, like that of *Troy*, and its inhabitants) *HAVE so far FOLLOWED us*. By implication therefore, *but let it follow us no farther*. *Here let it end*, *Hic sit Finis*, as *Servius* well observes in the place.

In which instances, by the way, mark not only the force of the *Tense*, but of the *Mood*, the **PRECATIVE** or **IMPERATIVE**, not in the *Future* but in the *Past*. See p. 154, 155, 156.

*Dictus avis, et nunc magnum manet Ardea
nomen,*

* *Sed fortuna FUIT—* AEn. VII.

THE reason of these significations is derived from THE COMPLETIVE POWER of the Tense here mentioned. We see that the periods of Nature, and of human affairs, are maintained by the reciprocal succession of *Contraries*. It is thus with Calm and Tempest; with Day and Night; with Prosperity and Adversity: with Glory and Ignominy; with Life and Death. Hence, then, in the instances above, the *completion* of one contrary is put for the *commencement* of the other, and to say, HATH LIVED, or HATH BEEN, has the same meaning with, IS DEAD, or, IS NO MORE.

* *Certus in hospitibus non est amor ; errat, ut ipsi :
Cumque nihil speres firmius esse, FUIT.*

Epist. Ovid. Helen. Paridi. ver. 190.

Sive erimus, seu nos Fata FUISS^E volent.

Tibull. III. 5. 32.

IT is remarkable in * *Virgil* that he frequently joins in the same sentence this *complete* and *perfect Present* with the *extended* and *passing Present*; which proves that he considered the two, as belonging to the same species of *Time*, and therefore naturally formed to co-incide with each other.

— *Tibi jam brachia contrahit ardens
Scorpius, et cæli justâ plus parte reliquit.*

G. I.

Terra tremit; fugere feræ— G. I.

*Præsertim si tempestas a vertice sylvis
Incubuit, glomeratque ferens incendia ventus.*

G. II.

— *illa noto citius, volucrique sagittâ,
Ad terram fugit, et portu se condidit alto.*

Æn. V.

IN the same maner he joins the same two modifications of *Time in the Past*, that

* See also *Spenser's Fairy Queen*, B. I. C. 3. St. 19.
C. 3. St. 39. C. 8. St. 9.

He hath his Shield redeem'd, and forth his Sword he draws

is to say, the *complete* and *perfect* Past with the *extended* and *passing*.

—Inruerant *Danai, et tectum omne tenebant.*

AEn. II.

Tres imbris torti radios, tres nubis aquosæ,

Addiderant rutili tres ignis, et alitis austri.

Fulgores nunc terrificos, sonitumque metumque

Miscebant operi, flammisque sequacibus iras.^(o)

AEn. VIII.

As to the IMPERFECTUM, it is sometimes employed to denote what is *usual* and *customary*. Thus *surgebat* and *scribebat* signify not only, *he was rising, he was*

^(o) The intention of *Virgil* may be better seen, in rendering one or two of the above passages into *English*.

—*Tibi jam brachia contrahit ardens*

Scorpius et celi justæ plus parte reliquit.

For thee the scorpion is now contracting his claws, and hath already left thee more than a just portion of Heaven. The Poet, from a high strain of poetic adulation, supposes the scorpion so desirous of admitting *Augustus* among the heavenly signs, that though he has already made him more than room enough, yet he still continues to

writing, but upon occasion they signify, *he USED to rise, he USED to write*. The reason of this is, that whatever is *customary* must be something which has been *frequently repeated*. But what has been *frequently repeated*, must needs require *an Extension of Time past*, and thus we fall insensibly into the TENSE here mentioned.

AGAIN, we are told by *Pliny* (whose authority likewise is confirmed by many gems and marbles still extant) that the

be making him more. Here then we have two acts, one *perfect*, the other *pending*, and hence the use of the two different Tenses. Some editions read *relinquit*; but *relinquit* has the authority of the celebrated *Medicean* manuscript.

—*Illa noto citius, volucrique sagittâ,
Ad terram fugit, et portu se condidit alto.*

The ship, quicker than the wind, or a swift arrow, CONTINUES FLYING to land, and is HID within the lofty harbour. We may suppose this Harbour (like many others) to have been surrounded with high Land. Hence the Vessel, immediately on entering it, was *completely hid* from those spectators who had gone out to see the Ship-race, but yet might *still continue sailing* towards the shore within.

ancient painters and sculptors, when they fixed their names to their works, did it *pendenti titulo, in a suspensive kind of Inscription*, and employed for that purpose the Tense here mentioned. It was Ἀπελλῆς ἐποίει, *Apelles faciebat*, Πολύκλειτος ἐποίει, *Polycletus faciebat*, and never ἐποίησε or *fecit*. By this they imagined that they avoided the shew of arrogance, and had in case of censure an apology (as it were) prepared, since it appeared from the work itself, that *it was once indeed in hand*, but no pretension that *it was ever finished.*^(v)

IT is remarkable that the very manner, in which the *Latins* derive these Tenses

—Inruerant *Danai, et tectum omne tenebant.*

The Greeks HAD ENTERED AND WERE THEN POSSESSING the whole house; as much as to say, they had entered and that was over, but their Possession continued still.

^(v) *Plin. Nat. Hist. L. I.* The first Printers (who were most of them Scholars and Critics) in imitation of the antient Artists used the same Tense. *Excudebat H.*

from one another, shews a plain reference to the system here advanced. From *the passing Present* come the passing Past, and Future. *Scribo, Scribebam, Scribam.* From *the perfect Present* come the perfect Past, and Future.—*Scripsi, Scripseram, Scripsero.* And so in all instances, even where the verbs are irregular, as from *Fero* come *Ferebam* and *Feram*; from *Tuli* come *Tuleram* and *Tulero*.

We shall conclude by observing, that the ORDER of the Tenses, as they stand ranged by the old Grammarians, is not a fortuitous Order, but is consonant to our perceptions, in the recognition of Time, according to what we have explained already.^(*) Hence it is, that the *Present*

Stephanus. Excudebat Guil. Morelius. Absolvebat Joan. Benenatus, which has been followed by Dr. Taylor in his late valuable edition of *Demosthenes*.

^(*) See before p. 109, 110, 111, 112, 113. Scaliger's observation upon this occasion is elegant.—*Ordo aystem*

Tense stands first; then *the Past Tenses*; and lastly *the Future*.

AND now, having seen what authorities there are for Aorists, or those Tenses which denote Time *indefinitely*; and what for those Tenses, opposed to Aorists, which mark it definitely (such as the Inceptive, the Middle, and the Completive), we here finish the subject of TIME and TENSES, and proceed to consider THE VERB IN OTHER ATTRIBUTES, which it will be necessary to deduce from other principles.

(*Temporum scil.*) aliter est, quam natura eorum. Quod enim præteriit, prius est, quam quod est, itaque primo loco debere poni videbatur. Verum, quod primo quoque tempore offertur nobis, id creat primas species in animo: quamobrem Præsens Tempus primum locum occupavit; est enim commune omnibus animalibus. Præteritum autem ius tantum, quæ memoriam prædicta sunt. Futurum verò etiam paucioribus, quippe quibus datum est prudentia officium. De Caus. Ling. Lat. c. 113. See also Seneca Epist. 124. Mutum animal sensu comprehendit præsentia; præteritorum, &c.

CHAP. VIII.

Concerning Modes.

WE have observed already ^(a) that the Soul's leading powers are those of *Perception* and those of *Volition*, which words we have taken in their most comprehensive acceptation. We have observed also, that *all Speech or Discourse* is a *publishing* or exhibiting some part of our soul, either a certain *Perception* or a certain *Volition*. Hence, then, according as we exhibit it either in *a different part*, or after *a different manner*, hence I say the variety of **MODES** or **Moods**.^(b)

^(a) See Chap. II.

^(b) Gaza defines a Mode exactly consonant to this doctrine. He says it is—βέλημα, εἰτ' ἐν πάθημα ψυχῆς διὰ φωνῆς σημαινόμενον—a *Volition or Affection of the Soul, signified through some Voice or Sound articulate.* Gram. L. IV: As therefore this is the nature of Modes, and Modes belong to Verbs, hence it is *Apollonius* observes—

If we simply *declare*, or *indicate* something to be, or not to be (whether a Perception or Volition it is equally the same), this constitutes that Mode called the DECLARATIVE or INDICATIVE.

A Perception.

—*Nosco crines, incanaque menta
Regis Romani*— Virg. *Aen.* VI.

A Volition.

*In nova FERT ANIMUS mutatas dicere formas
Corpora*— Ovid *Metam.* I.

If we do not strictly assert, as of something absolute and certain, but as of something *possible* only, and in the number of Contingents, this makes that Mode, which

τοῖς ρήμασιν ἐξαιρέτως παράκειται ἡ ψυχὴ διάθεσις—the Soul's disposition is in an eminent degree attached to Verbs. De Synt. L. III. c. 13. Thus too Priscian: *Modi sunt diverse INCLINATIONES ANIMI, quas varia consequitur DECLINATIO VERBI.* L. VIII. p. 821.

Grammarians call the **POTENTIAL**; and which becomes on such occasions the leading Mode of the sentence.

*Sed tacitus pasci si posset Corvus, HABERET
Plus dapis, &c.* Hor.

YET sometimes it is not the leading Mode, but only *subjoined* to the Indicative. In such case, it is mostly used to denote the *End*, or *final Cause*; which End, as in human Life it is always a Contingent, and may never perhaps happen, in despite of all our foresight, is therefore express most naturally by the **Mode here mentioned**. For example,

Ut JUGULENT homines, surgunt de nocte latrones. Hor.

Thieves rise by night, that they may cut men's throats.

HERE that they *rise*, is *positively asserted* in the *Declarative* or *Indicative Mode*; but as to their *cutting men's throats*, this is

only delivered *potentially*, because how truly soever it may be the *End* of their rising, it is still but a *Contingent*, that may never perhaps happen. This Mode, as often as it is in this manner subjoined, is called by Grammarians not the Potential, but the **SUBJUNCTIVE**.

BUT it so happens, in the constitution of human affairs, that it is not always sufficient merely to *declare* ourselves to others. We find it often expedient, from a consciousness of our inability, to address them after a manner more interesting to ourselves, whether to have *some Perception informed* or *some Volition gratified*. Hence then new Modes of speaking; if we *interrogate*, it is the **INTERROGATIVE MODE**; if we *require*, it is the **REQUISITIVE**. Even the Requisitive itself hath its *subordinate Species*: With respect to inferiors, it is an **IMPERATIVE MODE**; with respect to

equals and superiors, it is a PRECATIVE or OPTATIVE.*

AND thus have we established a variety of Modes; the INDICATIVE or DECLARATIVE, to assert *what we think certain*; the POTENTIAL, for the Purposes of *whatever we think Contingent*; THE INTERROGATIVE, *when we are doubtful, to procure us information*; and THE REQUISITIVE, *to assist us in the gratification of our Volitions*. The Requisitive too appears under two distinct species, either as it is IMPERATIVE to inferiors, or PRECATIVE to superiors.^(w)

* It was the confounding of this Distinction, that gave rise to a Sophism of *Protagoras*. Homer (says he) in beginning his Iliad with—*Sing, Muse, the Wrath*,—When he thinks to *pray*, in reality commands. εὐχεῖθαι οἰόμενος, ἐπειράσσει. Aristot. Poet. c. 19. The solution is evident from the Division here established, the Grammatical form being in both cases the same.

^(w) The Species of *Modes* in great measure depend on the

As therefore all these several Modes have their foundation in nature, so have

Species of Sentences. The Stoicks increased the number of Sentences far beyond the *Peripatetics*. Besides those mentioned in Chapter II. Note ⁽⁶⁾, they had many more, as may be seen in *Ammonius de Interpret.* p. 4. and *Diogenes Laertius*, L. VII. 66. The Peripatetics (and it seems too with reason) considered all these additional Sentences as included within those which they themselves acknowledged, and which they made to be five in number, the Vocative, the Imperative, the Interrogative, the Precative, and the Assertive.—There is no mention of a *Potential Sentence*, which may be supposed to co-incide with the Assertive or Indicative. The Vocative (which the Peripatetics called the εἰδός κλητικὸν, but the Stoicks more properly προσαγορευτικὸν) was nothing more than the Form of address in point of names, titles, and epithets, with which we apply ourselves one to another. As therefore it seldom included any Verb within it, it could hardly contribute to form a verbal Mode. *Ammonius* and *Boethius*, the one a Greek Peripatetic, the other a *Latin* have illustrated the Species of Sentences from *Homeric* and *Virgil*, after the following manner.

Ἄλλὰ τῷ λόγῳ πέντε εἰδῶν, τῷ τε ΚΛΗΤΙΚΟΥ, ὡς
ποδ., Ὡ μάκαρ Ἀτρεῖδη——
ἢ τῷ ΠΡΟΣΤΑΚΤΙΚΟΥ, ὡς τὸ,
Βάσκ' Ίθι, Ἰρι ταχεῖα——

certain marks or signs of them been introduced into languages, that we may be

ἢ τῇ ἘΡΩΤΗΜΑΤΙΚΟΥ, ὡς τὸ,
Τίς, ποθεν εἴς ἀνδρῶν; —
ἢ τῇ ἘΥΚΤΙΚΟΥ, ὡς τὸ,
Ἄν γὰρ Ζεῦ τε πάτερ —
ἢ ἐπὶ τέτοις, τῇ ἈΠΟΦΑΝΤΙΚΟΥ, καθ' δν ἀποφαινόμενα
περὶ ὅτους τῶν πραγμάτων, οἷον
— Θεοὶ δέ τε πάντα ἴσασιν —
ἢ περὶ παντὸς, &c. Εἰς τὸ περὶ Ἐρμ. p. 4.

*Boethius's Account is as follows. Perfectiarum vero
Orationum partes quinque sunt: DEPRECATIVA, ut,
Jupiter omnipotens, precibus si flecteris ullis,
Da deinde auxilium, Pater, atque hac omnia firma.*

IMPEBATIVE, *ut,*
Vade age, Nata, voca Zephyros, et labere pennis.

INTERROGATIVE, *ut,*
Dic mihi, Dameta, cujum pecus? —

VOCATIVE, *ut,*
O! Pater, O! hominum rerumque eterna potestas.

ENUNCIATIVE, *in qua Veritas vel Falsitas invenitur, ut,*
Principio arboribus varia est natura creandis.
Boeth. in Lib. de Interp. p. 291.

enabled by our discourse to signify them one to another. And hence those various **Modes** or **Moods**, of which we find in common Grammars so prolix a detail, and which are in fact no more than “so many *literal Forms*, intended to express these *natural Distinctions*.⁽⁴⁾

In *Milton* the same sentences may be found, as follows.

THE PRECATIVE,

—*Universal Lord! be bounteous still
To give us only Good—*

THE IMPERATIVE,

Go, then, Thou mightiest, in thy Father's might.

THE INTERROGATIVE,

Whence and what art thou, execrable Shape?

THE VOCATIVE,

—*Adam, earth's hallow'd Mold,
Of God inspir'd—*

THE ASSERTIVE or ENUNCIATIVE,

*The conquer'd also and enslaved by war
Shall, with their Freedom lost, all virtue lose.*

⁽⁴⁾ The Greek Language, which is of all the most elegant and complete, expresses these several Modes, and all dis-

ALL these MODES have this in common, that they exhibit some way or other the SOUL and its AFFECTIONS. Their Peculi-

tineties of Time likewise, by an adequate number of Variations in each particular Verb. These Variations may be found, some at the beginning of the Verb, others at its ending, and consist for the most part either in multiplying or diminishing the number of Syllables, or else in lengthening or shortening their respective Quantities, which two methods are called by Grammarians the *Syllabic* and the *Temporal*. The *Latin*, which is but a species of *Greek* somewhat debased, admits in like manner a large portion of those variations, which are chiefly to be found at the Ending of its Verbs, and but rarely at their Beginning. Yet in its Deponents and Passives, it is so far defective, as to be forced to have recourse to the *Auxiliar*, *sum*. The modern Languages, which have still fewer of those Variations, have been necessitated all of them to assume two Auxiliars at least, that is to say, those which express in each Language the Verbs, *Have*, and *Am*. As to the *English* Tongue, it is so poor in this respect, as to admit no Variation for Modes, and only one for Time, which we apply to express an Aorist of the Past. Thus from *Write* cometh *Wrote*; from *Give*, *Gave*; from *Speak*, *Spake*, &c. Hence to express Time, and Modes, we are compelled to employ no less than seven Auxiliars, viz. *Do*, *Am*, *Have*, *Shall*, *Will*, *May*, and *Can*; which we use sometimes singly, as when we say, I *am* writing, I *have* written;

arities and Distinctions are in part as follows.

THE REQUISITIVE and INTERROGATIVE MODES are distinguished from the *Indicative* and *Potential*, that whereas these *last seldom call for a Return*, to the two former it is *always necessary*.

If we compare the REQUISITIVE MODE with the INTERROGATIVE, we shall find these also distinguished, and that not only in the *Return*, but in other Peculiarities.

The Return to the Requisitive is sometimes

sometimes two together, as I *have been* writing, I *should have written*; sometimes no less than three, as I *might have been lost*, he *could have been preserved*. But for these, and all other speculations, relative to the *Genius* of the English Language, we refer the reader, who wishes for the most authentic information, to that excellent Treatise of the learned Dr. Lowth, intitled, *A short Introduction to English Grammar*.

made in *Words*, sometimes in *Deeds*. To the request of *Dido* to *Eneas*—

—*a prima dic, hospes, origine nobis
Insidias Dandum*—

the proper Return was in *Words*, that is, in an historical Narrative. To the Request of the unfortunate Chief—*date obolum Belisario*—the proper Return was in a Deed, that is, in a charitable Relief. But with respect to the *Interrogative*, the Return is necessarily made in *Words alone*, in Words, which are called a *Response* or *Answer*, and which are always actually or by implication some *definitive assertive Sentence*. Take Examples. *Whose Verses are these?* The Return is a Sentence—*These are Verses of Homer.* *Was Brutus a worthy Man?*—The Return is a Sentence—*Brutus was a worthy Man.*

AND hence (if we may be permitted to digress) we may perceive the near affinity

of this *Interrogative Mode* with the *Indicative*, in which last its Response or Return is mostly made. So near, indeed, is this *Affinity*, that in these two Modes alone the Verb retains the same Form,⁶⁹ nor are they otherwise distinguished, than either by the Addition or Absence of some small particle, or by some minute change in the collocation of the words, or sometimes only by a change in the Tone or Accent.⁷⁰

⁽⁶⁹⁾ Ἡγε ὃν προκειμένη δριτικὴ ἔγκλισις, τὴν ἔγκειμένην κατάφασιν ἀποβάλλεσα, μεθίσαται τὸ καλεῖσθαι δριτική—ἀναπληρωθεῖσα δὲ τῆς καταφάσεως, ὑποστρέφει εἰς τὸ ἔναυ δριτική. *The Indicative Mode, of which we speak, by laying aside that Assertion, which by its nature it implies, quits the name of Indicative—when it reassumes the Assertion it returns again to its proper Character.* Apoll. de Synt. L. III. c. 21. Theodore Gaza says the same, *Introd. Gram.* L. IV.

⁽⁷⁰⁾ It may be observed of the **INTERROGATIVE**, that as often as the *Interrogation* is simple and definite, the Response may be made in almost the *same Words*, by converting them into a sentence affirmative or negative, ac-

BUT to return to our comparison between the *Interrogative Mode* and the *Requisitive*.

THE INTERROGATIVE (in the language of Grammarians) has all *Persons* of both

cording as the truth is, either one or the other. For example—*Are these Verses of Homer?*—Response—*These Verses are of Homer.* *Are those Verses of Virgil?*—Response—*Those are not Verses of Virgil.* And here the Artists of Language, for the sake of brevity and dispatch have provided two Particles, to represent all such Responses; Yes, for all the affirmative; No, for all the negative.

But when the *Interrogation* is *complex*, as when we say—*Are these Verses of Homer, or of Virgil?*—much more, when it is *indefinite*, as when we say in general—*Whose are these Verses?*—We cannot then respond after the manner above mentioned. The Reason is, that no Interrogation can be answered by a simple *Yes*, or a simple *No*, except only those, which are themselves so simple, as of two possible answers to admit only one. Now the least complex Interrogation will admit of four Answers, two affirmative, two negative, if not, perhaps of more. The reason is, a complex Interrogation cannot subsist of less than two simple ones; each of which may be separately affirmed and separately denied. For instance—*Are these*

Numbers. The REQUISITIVE or IMPERATIVE has no *first Person* of the singular, and that from this plain reason, that it is equally absurd in *Modes* for a

Verses Homer's or Virgil's? (1.) *They are Homer's*—(2.) *They are not Homer's*—(3) *They are Virgil's*—(4.) *They are not Virgil's*—we may add *They are of neither*. The indefinite Interrogations go still farther; for these may be answered by infinite affirmatives, and infinite negatives. For instance—*Whose are these Verses?* We may answer affirmatively—*They are Virgil's* *They are Horace's*, *They are Ovid's*, &c.—or negatively—*They are not Virgil's*, *They are not Horace's* *They are not Ovid's* and so on, either way, to infinity. How then should we learn from a single *Yes*, or a single *No*, which particular is meant among infinite Possibles? These therefore are Interrogations which must be always answered by a *Sentence*. Yet even here Custom has consulted for Brevity, by returning for Answer only the *single essential characteristic Word*, and retrenching by an Ellipsis all the rest, which rest the Interrogator is left to supply from himself. Thus when we are asked—*How many right angles equal the angles of a triangle?*—we answer in the short monosyllable, *Two*; whereas, without the Ellipsis, the answer would have been—*Two right angles equal the angles of a triangle.*

The Ancients distinguished these two Species of Inter-

person to *request* or give commands to himself, as it is in *Pronouns*, for the speaker to become the subject of his own address.*

AGAIN, we may interrogate as to all Times, both Present, Past, and Future. Who was Founder of Rome? Who is King of China? Who will discover the Longitude?—But *Intreating* and *Commanding* (which are the Essence of the Requisitive Mode) have a necessary respect to the Future^(a) only. For indeed what

rogation by different names. The simple they called 'Ερώτημα, *Interrogatio*; the complex, πύσμα, *Perconitatio*. Ammonius calls the first of these Ἐρώτησις διαλεκτική; the other, Ἐρώτησις πυσματική. See Am. in. Lib. de Interpr. p. 160. Diog. Laert. VII. 66. Quintil. Inst. IX. 2.

* Sup. p. 74, 75.

^(a) Apollonius's Account of the Future, implied in all Imperatives, is worth observing. Επὶ γὰρ μὴ γιναφένοις ή μὴ γεγονόσιν ή ΠΡΟΣΤΑΞΙΣ· τὰ δὲ μὴ γινόμενα ή μὴ γεγονότα, ἐπιτηδειότητα δὲ ἔχοντα εἰς τὸ ἔσεσθαι, ΜΕΛ-

have they to do with the present or the past, the natures of which are immutable and necessary?

ΔΟΝΤΟΣ ἐστι. A COMMAND has respect to those things which either are not doing, or have not yet been done. But those things, which being not now doing, or having not yet been done, have a natural aptitude to-exist hereafter, may be properly said to appertain to THE FUTURE. De Syntaxi, L. I. c. 36. Soon before this he says—"Απαντα τὰ προτακτικὰ ἐγκεψένην ἔχει τὴν τῷ μελλοντος διάθεσιν—χηδὸν γάρ ἐν Ἰωῳ ἐτί τὸ, 'Ο ΤΥΡΑΝΝΟΚΤΟΝΗΣΑΣ ΤΙΜΑΣΘΩ, τῷ ΤΙΜΗΘΗΣΕΤΑΙ, κατὰ τὴν χρόνον ἐννοιαν τῇ ἐκκλίσει διηλαχός, καθὸ τὸ μὲν προτακτικὸν, τὸ δὲ δριτικόν. All IMPERATIVES have a disposition within them, which respects THE FUTURE—with regard therefore to TIME, it is the same thing to say, LET HIM, THAT KILLS A TYRANT, BE HONOURED, or, HE, THAT KILLS ONE, SHALL BE HONOURED; the difference being only in the Mode, in as much as one is IMPERATIVE, the other INDICATIVE or Declarative. Apoll. de Syntaxi. L. I. c. 35. Priscian seems to allow Imperatives a share of Present Time, as well as Future. But if we attend, we shall find his Present to be nothing else than an immediate Future, as opposed to a more distant one. Imperationis vero Præsens et Futurum [Tempus] naturali quædam necessitate videtur posse accipere. Ea etenim imperamus, que vel in præsenti statione volumus fieri sine aliquâ dilatatione, vel in futura. Lib. VIII. p. 806.

IT is from this connection of *Futurity* with *Commands*, that the *Future Indicative* is sometimes used for the *Imperative* and that to say to any one, **YOU SHALL DO THIS**, has often the same force with the *Imperative*, **DO THIS**. So in the Decalogue—**THOU SHALT NOT KILL**—**THOU**

It is true the *Greeks* in their Imperatives admit certain Tenses of the Past, such as those of the *Perfectum*, and of the two *Aorists*. But then these Tenses, when so applied, either totally lose their *temporary* Character, or else are used to insinuate such a *Speed of execution*, that the deed should be (as it were) *done* in the very instant when commanded. The same difference seems to subsist between our *English* Imperative, **BE GONE**, and those others of, **Go**, or **BE GOING**. The first (if we please) may be stiled the *Imperative of the Perfectum* as calling in the very instant for the completion of our Commands: the others may be stiled *Imperatives of the Future*, as allowing a reasonable time to begin first, and finish afterwards.

It is thus *Apollonius* in the Chapter first cited, distinguishes between σκαπτέρω τὰς ἀμπελάς, *Go to digging the Vines*, and σκαψάτω τὰς ἀμπελάς, *Get the Vines dug*. The first is spoken (as he calls it) εἰς παράστων, *by way of Extension, or allowance of Time for the work*; the

SHALT NOT BEAR FALSE WITNESS—
which denote (we know) the strictest and
most authoritative Commands.

As to the POTENTIAL MODE, it is distinguished from all the rest, by its *subordinate* or *subjunctive* Nature. It is also farther distinguished from the *Requisitive* and *Interrogative*, by implying a kind of feeble and weak *Assertion*, and so becoming in some degree susceptible of Truth and

second *εἰς συντελείασιν*, with a view to immediate Completion. And in another place, explaining the difference between the same Tenses, Σκάπτε and Σκύψον, he says of the last, ἐ μόνον τὸ μὴ γενόμενον προστάσσει, ἀλλὰ ἐ τὸ γενόμενον ἐν παρατάσσει ἀπαγορεύει, that it not only commands something which has not been yet done, but forbids also that which is now doing in an Extension, that is to say, in a slow and lengthened progress. Hence, if a man has been a long while writing, and we are willing to hasten him, it would be wrong to say in Greek ΓΡΑΦΕ, WRITE for that he is now, and has been long doing) but ΓΡΑΨΟΝ GET YOUR WRITING DONE: MAKE NO DELAYS. See Apoll. L. III. c. 24. See also *Macrobius de Diff. Verb. Græc. et Lat.* p. 680. *Edit. Varior. Latini non aestimaverunt*, &c.

Falsehood. Thus, if it be said potentially, *This may be*, or *This might have been*, we may remark without absurdity, *It is true*, or *It is false*. . But if it be said, *Do this*, meaning, *Fly to Heaven*, or *Can this be done?* meaning, *to square the Circle*, we cannot say in either case, *it is true* or *it is false*, though the Command and the Question are about things impossible. Yet still the *Potential* does not aspire to the *Indicative*, because it implies but a *dubious* and *conjectural Assertion*, whereas that of the *Indicative* is absolute, and without reserve.

THIS therefore (the INDICATIVE I mean) is the Mode, which, as in all Grammars it is the first in order, so is truly first both in dignity and use. It is this which publishes our sublimest perceptions, which exhibits the Soul in her purest Energies, superior to the Imperfections of desires and wants: which includes the

whole of *Time*, and its minutest distinctions ; which, in its various *Past Tenses*, is employed by History, to preserve to us the remembrance of former Events ; in its *Futures* is used by Prophecy, or (in default of this) by wise Foresight, to instruct and forewarn us, as to that which is coming ; but above all in its *Present Tense* serves Philosophy and the Sciences by just Demonstrations to establish *necessary Truth* ; THAT TRUTH, which from its nature *only exists in the Present* ; which knows no distinctions either of Past or of Future, but is every where, and always invariably one.⁽ⁿ⁾

(n) See the quotation, Note ^(e) Chapter the Sixth. *Cum enim dicimus, Deus est, non cum dicimus nunc esse, sed, &c.*

Boethius, author of the sentiment there quoted, was by birth a *Roman* of the first quality ; by religion, a Christian ; and by philosophy a Platonic and Peripatetic ; which two Sects, as they sprang from the same Source, were in the latter ages of antiquity commonly adopted by the same Persons, such as *Themistius*, *Porphyry*, *Iambili-*

THROUGH all the above Modes, with their respective Tenses, the Verb being considered as denoting an ATTRIBUTE has always reference to some Person, or SUBSTANCE. Thus if we say, *Went*, or, *Go*, or *Whither goeth*, or, *Might have gone*, we must add a Person or Substance, to make the Sentence complete. Cicero *went*; Cæsar *might have gone*; *Whither goeth the Wind?* *Go*; *Thou Traitor!* But there is a Mode or Form, under which

thus, Ammonius, and others. There were no Sects of Philosophy, that lay greater Stress on the distinction between things existing in Time and not in Time, than the two above-mentioned. The Doctrine of the Peripatetics on this Subject (since it is these that Boethius here follows) may be partly understood from the following Sketch.

“ THE THINGS THAT EXIST IN TIME, are those “ whose Existence Time can measure. But if their “ Existence may be measured by Time, then there may “ be assumed a Time greater, than the Existence of any “ one of them, as there may be assumed a number “ greater than the greatest multitude that is capable of

Verbs sometimes appear, where they have no reference at all to Persons or Substances. For example—*To eat is pleasant,*

“ being numbered. And hence it is that *things temporary* “ have their Existence, as it were, *limited by Time*; that “ they are confined within it, as within some bound; and “ that in some degree or other they *all submit to its power*, according to those common Phrases, that *Time is a destroyer*; that *things decay through Time*; that *men forget in Time, and lose their abilities*, and seldom “ that they improve, or grow young, or beautiful. The “ truth indeed is, *Time always attends Motion*. Now the “ natural effect of Motion is *to put something, which now is, out of that state, in which it now is*, and so far there-“ fore to destroy that state.

“ The reverse of all this holds with **THINGS THAT EXIST ETERNALLY**. These exist *not in Time*, because “ Time is so far from being able to measure their Exist-“ ence, that *no Time can be assumed, which their Exist- ence doth not surpass*. To which we may add, that they “ *feel none of its effects*, being no way obnoxious either to “ damage or dissolution.

“ To instance in examples of either kind of Being. “ There are such things at this instant, as *Stonehenge* “ and the *Pyramids*. It is likewise true at this instant, “ that the *Diameter of the Square is commensurable with its side*. What then shall we say? Was there ever

but to fast is wholesome. Here the Verbs, *To eat*, and *To fast*, stand alone by themselves, nor is it requisite or even practicable to prefix a Person or Substance. Hence the *Latin* and modern Grammarians have called Verbs under this Mode, from this their indefinite nature, **INFINITIVES**. *Sanctius* has given them the name of *Impersonals*; and the *Greeks* that of 'Απα-

" a Time, when it was *not incommensurable*, as it is certain
 " there was a Time, when there was no Stonehenge, or
 " Pyramids ? or is it *daily* growing less *incommensurable*;
 " as we are assured of Decays in both those massy Struc-
 " tures ?" From these unchangeable Truths, we may
 pass to their Place, or Region ; to the unceasing Intellec-
 tion of the Universal Mind, ever perfect, ever full, knowing
 no remissions, languors, &c. See *Nat. Auct.* L. IV. c.
 19. *Metaph.* L. XIV. c. 6, 7, 8, 9, 10. . Edit. Du Val.
 and Vol. I p. 262. Note VII. The following Passage
 may deserve Attention:

Τοῦ γὰρ Νοῦ δὲ μὲν νοεῖν πέφυκεν, οὐ μὴ νοῶν δὲ δὲ πέφυκε, οὐ νοεῖ. ἀλλὰ καὶ οὐπος οὐπω τέλεος, ἀν μὴ προσθῆς αὐτῷ τὸ οὐ νοεῖν ἀεί, οὐ πάντα νοεῖν, οὐ μὴ ἄλλοτε ἄλλα. ὥστε εἴη διν ἐντελέσταος δὲ νοῶν ἀεί οὐ πάντα, οὐ ἄμα. Max.
 Tyr. Diss. XVII. p. 201. Ed. Lond.

ρέμφατα, from the same reason of their *not discovering* either Person or Number.

THESE INFINITIVES go farther. They not only lay aside the character of *Attributives*, but they also assume that of *Substantives*, and as such themselves become distinguished with their several *Attributes*. Thus in the instance above, *Pleasant* is the Attribute attending the infinitive *To Eat*; *Wholesome* the attribute attending the Infinitive, *To Fast*. Examples in *Greek* and *Latin* of like kind are innumerable:

Dulce et decorum est pro patria MORI.
SCIRE TUNCTUM NIHIL EST—

Oὐ καθαρεῖν γὰρ δεινόν, ἀλλ' αἰσχροῦς θανεῖν.⁽¹⁾

⁽¹⁾ It is from the INFINITIVE thus participating the nature of a Noun or Substantive, that the best Grammarians have called it sometimes "Ονομα ρηματικὸν ή

THE Stoicks, in their grammatical inquiries, had this Infinitive in such esteem, that they held this alone to be the genuine PHMA or VERB, a name which they denied to all the other Modes. Their reasoning was, they considered the true ver-

VERBAL NOUN; sometimes Ὄνομα ρήματος, THE VERB's NOUN. The Reason of this Appellation is in Greek more evident, from its taking the prepositive Article before it in all cases; τὸ γράφειν, τῷ γράφειν, τῷ γράφειν. The same construction is not unknown in English.

Thus Spencer,

*For not to have been dipt in Lethe lake,
Could save the Son of Thetis FROM TO DIE—*

ἀπὸ τῆς Σανεῖν. In like manner we say, *He did it, to be rich*, where we must supply by an Ellipsis the Preposition, FOR. *He did it, for to be rich*, the same as if we had said, *He did it for gain*—ἐνεκα τῷ πλοτεῖν, ἐνεκα τῷ κέρδει—in French *pour s'enrichir*. Even when we speak such Sentences as the following, *I choose to PHILOSOPHIZE, rather than TO BE RICH*, τὸ φιλοσοφεῖν βέλομαι, ἥπερ τὸ πλοτεῖν, the Infinitives are in nature as much Accusatives, as if we were to say, *I choose PHILOSOPHY rather than RICHES*, τὴν φιλοσοφίαν βέλομαι, ἥπερ τὴν πλοτῶν. Thus too Priscian, speaking of Infini-

bal character to be contained *simple* and *unmixed* in the *Infinitive only*. Thus the Infinitives, Περιπατεῖν, *Ambulare*, *To Walk*, mean *simply* that energy, and *nothing more*. The other Modes, besides expressing this energy, *superadd certain Affections* which respect persons and circumstances. Thus *Ambulo* and *Ambula* mean not simply *To walk*, but mean, *I walk*, and, *Walk Thou*. And hence they are all of them resolvable into the *Infinitive*, as their *Prototype*, together with some sentence or word, expressive of their proper Character. Am-

tives—CUBBERE enim est CUBSUS; et SCRIBERE, SCRIP-
TURA; et LEGERE LECTIO. Itaque frequenter et Nomi-
nibus adjunguntur, et aliis casualibus, more Nominum;
ut Persius,

Sed pulcrum est digito monstrari, et dicier, hic est.

And soon after—*Cum enim dico, BONUM EST LEGERE,*
nihil aliud significo, nisi, BONA EST LECTIO. L. XVIII.
p. 1130. See also Apoll. L. I. c. 8. Gaza Gram. L.
IV. Τὸ δὲ ἀπαρέμφατον, ὅνυμά ἐστι ρήματος κ. τ. λ.

bulo, I walk; this is, *Indico me ambulare*, *I declare myself to walk*. *Ambula, Walk Thou*; that is *Impero te ambulare*, *I command thee to walk*; and so with the Modes of every other species. Take away therefore the *Assertion*, the *Command*, or whatever else gives a *Character* to any one of these Modes, and there remains nothing more than THE MERE INFINITIVE which (as *Priscian* says) *significat ipsam rem, quam continet Verbum.*^(*)

THE application of this Infinitive is somewhat singular. It *naturally coalesces*

^(*) See *Apollon.* L. III. 13. Καθόλς τὰν παρηγμένον ἀπὸ τινος κ. τ. λ. See also *Gaza*, in the note before. *Igitur a Constructione quoque Vim rei Verborum (id est Nominis, quod significat ipsam rem) habere INFINITIVUM possumus dignoscere*; res autem in Personas distributa facit alios verbi motus.—*Itaque omnes modi in hunc, id est, Infinitivum, transmutantur sive resolvuntur.* *Prisc.* L. XXVIII. p. 1131. From these Principles *Apollonius* calls the Infinitive 'Πῆμα γενικώτατον, and *Priscian*, *Verbum generale*.

with all those Verbs, that denote any *Tendency, Desire, or Volition of the Soul*, but not readily with others. Thus it is sense as well as syntax, to say $\beta\delta\lambda\mu\alpha\iota\zeta\eta$, *Cupio vivere, I desire to live*; but not to say 'Εδίω $\zeta\eta$, *Edo vivere*, or even in *English, I eat to live*, unless by an Ellipsis, instead of *I eat for to live*; as we say Σένεια το $\zeta\eta$, or *pour vivre*. The reason is, that though *different Actions* may unite in the *same Subject*, and therefore be coupled together (as when we say, *He walked and discoursed*) yet the Actions notwithstanding remain separate and distinct. But it is not so with respect to *Volitions, and Actions*. Here the coalescence is often so intimate, that *the Volition* is unintelligible, till *the Action* be express. *Cupio, Volo, Desidero—I desire, I am willing, I want—What?*—The Sentences, we see, are defective and imperfect. We must help them then by *Infinitives*, which express the proper Actions to which they

tend. *Cupio legere, Volo discere, Desidero videre, I desire to read, I am willing to learn, I want to see.* Thus is the whole rendered complete, as well in sentiment as in syntax.⁽ⁿ⁾

AND so much for MODES, and their several SPECIES. We are to attempt to denominate them according to their most eminent characters, it may be done in the following manner. As every necessary truth, and every demonstrative syllogism (which last is no more than a combination of such truths) must always be exprest under positive assertions, and as positive assertions only belong to the *Indicative*, we

⁽ⁿ⁾ *Priscian* calls these Verbs, which naturally precede Infinitives, *Verba Voluntativa*; they are called in Greek προαιρετικά. See L. XVIII. 1129, but more particularly see *Apollonius*, L. III. c. 18, where this whole doctrine is explained with great Accuracy. See also *Macrobius de Diff. Verb. Gr. et Lat.* p. 635. *Ed. Var.*

—*Nec omne ἀπαρέμφατον cuiuscunque Verbo, &c.*

may denominate it for that reason the **MODE OF SCIENCE.**^(m) Again, as the *Potential* is only conversant about *Contingents*, of which we cannot say with certainty that they will happen or not, we may call this Mode, **THE MODE OF CONJECTURE**. Again, as those that are ignorant and would be informed, must ask of those that already know, this being the natural way of becoming *Proficients*; hence we may call the *Interrogative*, **THE MODE OF PROFICIENCY**.

*Inter cuncta leges, et PERCONTABERE doctos,
Quā ratione queas traducere leniter ævum,
Quid pure tranquillet, &c.* Hor.

Farther still, as the highest and most excellent use of the *Requisitive* Mode is legislative command, we may stile it for this reason **THE MODE OF LEGISLATURE**. *Ad*

^(m) *Ob nobilitatem præivit INDICATIVUS, solus Modus aptus Scientiis, solus Pater Veritatis.* Scal. de Caus. L. Lat. c. 116.

Divos adeunto castè, says *Cicero* in the character of a *Roman* law-giver; *Be it therefore enacted*, say the laws of *England*; and in the same *Mode* speak the *laws* of every other nation. It is also in this *Mode* that the geometrician, with the authority of a legislator, orders lines to be bisected, and circles described, as preparatives to that science which he is about to establish.

THERE are other *supposed* affections of Verbs, such as *Number* and *Person*. But these surely cannot be called a part of their essence, nor indeed are they the essence of any other Attribute, being in fact the properties, not of Attributes, but of Substances. The most that can be said is, that Verbs in the more elegant languages are provided with certain terminations, which respect the *Number* and *Person* of every *Substantive*, that we may know with more precision, in a complex sentence, each particular substance, with its attend-

ant verbal Attributes. The same may be said of *Sex* with respect to Adjectives. They have terminations which vary, as they respect Beings male or female, tho' *Substances* past dispute are alone susceptible of sex.⁽ⁿ⁾ We therefore pass over these matters, and all of like kind, as being rather among the elegancies, than the essentials^(o) of language, which essentials are

(n) It is somewhat extraordinary, that so acute and rational a Grammarian as *Sanctius*, should justly deny *Genders*, or the distinction of *Sex* to *Adjectives*, and yet make *Persons* appertain, not to *Substantives* but to *Verbs*. His commentator *Perizonius* is much more consistent, who says—*At vero si rem rectè consideres, ipsis Nominibus et Pronominibus vel maxime, imò unicè inest ipsa Persona; et Verba se habent in Personarum ratione ad Nomina planè sicuti Adjectiva in ratione Generum ad Substantiva, quibus solis auctor* (*Sanctius scil. L. I. c. 7.*) *et rectè Genus adscribit, exclusis Adjectivis.* *Sanct. Minerv. L. I. c. 12.* There is indeed an exact Analogy between the Accidents of *Sex* and *Person*. There are but two *Sexes*, that is to say, the Male and the Female; and but two *Persons* (or Characters essential to discourse) that is to say, the Speaker and the Party addressed. The third Sex and third Person are improperly so called, being in fact but Negations of the other two.

(o) Whoever would see more upon a subject of importance

the subject of our present inquiry. The principal of these now remaining is THE DIFFERENCE OF VERBS, AS TO THEIR SEVERAL SPECIES, which we endeavour to explain in the following manner.

referred to in many parts of this treatise, and particularly in note^(*) of this chapter, may consult *Letters concerning Mind*, an Octavo Volume published 1750, the Author Mr. John Petuin, *Vicar of Ilsington, in Devon*, a person who though from his retired situation little known, was deeply skilled in the Philosophy both of the Antients and Moderns and, more than this, was valued by all that knew him for his virtue and worth.

CHAP. IX.

Concerning the Species of Verbs, and their other remaining properties.

ALL Verbs, that are strictly so called, denote ^(a) Energies. Now as all *Energies* are *Attributes*, they have reference of course to certain *energizing Substances*. Thus it is impossible there should be such Energies, as *To love, to fly, to wound, &c.* if there were not such beings as *Men, Birds, Swords, &c.* Farther, every Energy doth not only require an Energizer, but is necessarily conversant about some *Subject*. For example, if we say, *Brutus loves*—we must

^(a) We use this word *ENERGY*, rather than *Motion*, from its more comprehensive meaning; it being a sort of Genus, which includes within it both *Motion* and its *Pri-vation*. See before, p. 94, 95.

needs supply—loves *Cato*, *Cassius*, *Portia*, or some one. *The Sword wounds*—i. e. wounds *Hector*, *Sarpedon*, *Priam*, or some one. And thus is it, that every Energy is necessarily situate between two Substantives, an Energizer which is *active*, and a Subject which is *passive*. Hence, then, if the Energizer lead the sentence, the Energy follows its character, and becomes what we call A VERB ACTIVE.—Thus we say *Brutus amat*, *Brutus loves*. On the contrary, if the passive Subject be principal, it follows the character of this too, and then becomes what we call A VERB PASSIVE.—Thus we say, *Portia amatur*, *Portia is loved*. It is in like manner that the same Road between the summit and foot of the same mountain, with respect to the summit is *Ascent*, with respect to the foot is *Descent*. Since then every Energy respects an Energizer or a passive Subject; hence the Reason why every Verb, whether active or passive, has in lan-

guage a necessary reference to some *Noun* for its *Nominative Case*.⁽⁶⁾

BUT to proceed still farther from what has been already observed. *Brutus loved Portia*—Here *Brutus* is the Energizer; *loved*, the *Energy*; and *Portia*, the *Subject*. But it might have been *Brutus loved Cato* or *Cassius*, or the *Roman Republic*; for the Energy is referable to Subjects infinite. Now among these infinite Subjects, when that happens to occur which is the Energizer also, as when we say *Brutus loved himself*, slew *himself*, &c. in such Case the Energy hath to the same being a double Relation both active and passive. And this

⁽⁶⁾ The doctrine of Impersonal Verbs has been justly rejected by the best Grammarians, both antient and modern. See *Sanct. Min.* L. I. c. 12. L. III. c. 1. L. IV, c. 3. *Priscian* L. XVIII. p. 1134. *Apoll.* L. III. sub fin. In which places the reader will see a proper Nominative supplied to all Verbs of this supposed Character.

it is which gave rise among the *Greeks* to that species of Verbs, called **VERBS MIDDLE**^(c) and such was their true and original use, however in many instances they may have since happened to deviate. In other languages the Verb still retains its active Form, and the passive Subject (*se* or *himself*) is expressed like other accusatives.

AGAIN, in some Verbs it happens that the Energy *always keeps within* the Energizer, and *never passes out* to any foreign extraneous Subject. Thus when we say, *Cæsar walketh, Cæsar sitteth*, it is impossi-

^(c) Τὰ γὰρ καλέμενα μεσότητος χήματα συνέμπτωσιν ἀνεδέξατο ἐνεργετικῆς ἢ παθητικῆς διαθέσεως. *The Verbs called Verbs middle, admit a Coincidence of the active and passive Character.* Apollon. L. III. c. 7. He that would see this whole Doctrine concerning the power of THE MIDDLE VERB explained and confirmed with great Ingenuity and Learning, may consult a small Treatise of that able Critic Kuster, entitled, *De vero Usu Verborum Mediorum.* A neat edition of this scarce piece has been lately published.

ble the *Energy* should pass out (as in the case of those Verbs called by the Grammarians VERBS TRANSITIVE) because both the *Energizer* and the *Passive Subject* are united in the same Person. For what is the cause of this walking or sitting?—It is the *Will* and *Vital Powers* belonging to *Cæsar*. And what is the subject, made so to move or to sit?—It is the *Body* and *Limbs* belonging also to the same *Cæsar*. It is this then forms that species of Verbs, which grammarians have thought fit to call VERBS NEUTER, as if indeed they were void both of *Action* and *Passion*, when perhaps (like Verbs middle) they may be rather said to *imply both*. Not however to dispute about names, as these Neuters in their *Energizer* always discover their *passive Subject*,^(c) which other Verbs cannot,

^(c) This Character of Neuters the Greeks very happily express by the Terms, Αὐτονάθεια and Ἰδιονάθεια, which Priscian renders, *que ex se in seipso fili intrinsecus Passeo.* L. VIII. 790 Consentit Ars apud Putsch. p. 2051.

their passive Subjects being infinite ; hence the reason why it is as superfluous in these Neuters to have the Subject expressed, as in other Verbs it is necessary, and cannot be omitted. And thus it is that we are taught in common grammars that *Verbs*

It may be here observed, that even those Verbs, called *Actives*, can, upon occasion, lay aside their transitive character, that is to say, can drop their subsequent Accusative, and assume the Form of Neuters, so as to stand by themselves. This happens, when the Discourse respects the mere *Energy* or *Affection* only, and has no regard to the Subject, be it this thing or that. Thus we say, ἐκ οἴδεν ἀναγνώσκειν ὄρος, *This Man knows not how to read,* speaking only of the Energy in which we suppose him deficient. Had the Discourse been upon the Subjects of reading, we must have added them ; ἐκ οἴδεν ἀναγνώσκειν τὰ Ὀμήρου, *He knows not how to read Homer,* or *Virgil,* or *Cicero,* &c.

Thus Horace,

*Qui CUPIT aut METUIT, juvat illum sic domus aut res,
Ut lippum pictae tabulae—*

He that DESIRES or FEARS (not this thing in particular, nor that, but in general he within whose breast these affections prevail) has the same joy in a House or Estate, as in

Actives require an Accusative, while Neuters require none.

Of the above species of Verbs, the *Middle* cannot be called necessary, because most languages have done without it. THE SPECIES OF VERBS, therefore, remaining are the *ACTIVE*, the *PASSIVE* and the *NEUTER*, and those seem essential to all languages whatever.^(a)

Men with bad Eyes has in fine Pictures. So Cæsar in his celebrated Laconic Epistle of, VENI, VIDI, VICI, where two Actives we see follow one Neuter in the same detached Form, as that Neuter itself. The Glory it seems was in the rapid Sequel of the Events. Conquest came as quick as he could come himself, and look about him. Whom he saw, and whom he conquered, was not the thing of which he boasted. See Apoll. L. III c. 31. p. 279.

^(a) The Stoicks, in their logical view of Verbs, as making part in Propositions, considered them under the four following Sorts.

When a Verb, co-inciding with the Nominative of some Noun made without further help a perfect assertive Sentence, as Σωκράτης πεποντί, Socrates walketh; then as

THERE remains a remark or two farther and then we quit the Subject of Verbs. It is true in general that the greater part of them denote Attributes of *Energy* and

the Verb in such case implied the Power of a perfect Predicate, they called it for that reason Κατηγόρημα, a *Predicable*; or else, from its readiness συμβάλειν, to co-incide with its Noun in completing the Sentence, they called it Σύμβαμα, a *Co-incider*.

When a *Verb* was able with a *Noun* to form a perfect assertive Sentence, yet could not associate with such Noun but under some *oblique Case*, as Σωκράτει μεταμέλει, *Socratem penitet*: Such a Verb, from its near approach to just *Co-incidence and Predication*, they called Παρασύμβαμα or Παρακατηγόρημα,

When a Verb, though regularly co-inciding with a Noun in its *Nominative*, still required, to complete the Sentiment, some other Noun under an *oblique Case*, as Πλάτων φιλεῖ Δίων, *Plato loveth Dio* (where without *Dio* or some other, the Verb *loveth* would rest indefinite), such Verb, from this Defect, they called ἡττον ἢ σύμβαμα, or ἡ κατηγόρημα, *something less than a Co-incider, or less than a Predicable*.

Lastly, when a Verb required two *Nouns* in *oblique Cases*, to render the Sentiment complete; as when we say

Motion. But there are some which appear to denote nothing more, than a *mere simple Adjective*, joined to an Assertion. Thus *ἰσάζει* in *Greek*, and *Equalleth* in *English* mean nothing more than *ἴσος ἔξι*, *is equal*. So *Albeo*, in *Latin*, is no more than *albus sum*.

Campique ingentes ossibus albent. Virg.

THE same may be said of *Tumeo. Mons*

Σωκράτει Ἀλκιβιάδες μελει, *Tædet me Vitæ*, or the like : Such Verb they called ἥπτον, or ἔλαττον ἡ παρασύμβασις, or ἡ παρακατηγόρημα, *something less than an imperfect Co-incider, or an imperfect Predicable*.

These were the *Appellations* which they gave to Verbs, when employed along with Nouns to the forming of Propositions. As to the Name of 'PHMA, or VERB, they denied it to them all, giving it only to the *Infinitive*, as we have shewn already. See page 164. See also *Ammon. in Lib. de Interpret.* p. 87. *Apollon. de Syntaxi*, L. I. c. 8. L. III. c. 31. p. 279. c. 32. p. 295. *Theod. Gaza Gram.* L. IV.

From the above Doctrine it appears, that all *Verbs Neuter* are Συμβάσαται; *Verbs Active* ἥπτονται ἡ συμβάσαται.

tumet, i. e. *tumidus est*, is *tumid*. To express the Energy in these instances, we must have recourse to the Inceptives.

Fluctus uti primo cœpit cum ALBESCERE Vento.
Virg.

— *Freta ponti*
Incipiunt agitata TUMESCERE. Virg.

THERE are Verbs also to be found which are formed out of Nouns. So that as in *Abstract Nouns* (such as *Whiteness* from *White*, *Goodness* from *Good*) as also in the *Infinitive Modes* of Verbs, the *Attributive* is converted into a *Substantive*; here the *Substantive on the contrary* is converted into an *Attributive*. Such are *Kuίζεν* from κύων, *to act the part of a Dog*, or *be a Cynic*; *Φιλιππίζεν* from Φίλιππος, *to Philippize* or *favour Philip*; *Syllaturire* from *Sylla*, *to meditate acting the same part as Sylla did*. Thus too the wise and virtuous Emperor, by way of counsel to himself—

ὅτα μὴ ἀποκαίσαρεθῆς, beware thou beest not BECÆSAR'D; as though he said, *Beware, that by being Emperor, thou dost not dwindle into a mere Cæsar.*^(a) In like manner one of our own witty Poets,

STERNHOLD himself he OUT-STERNHOLDED.

And long before him the facetious *Fuller*, speaking of one *Morgan*, a sanguinary Bishop in the Reign of Queen *Mary*, says of him, *that he OUT-BONNER'D even Bonner himself.**

AND SO MUCH FOR THAT SPECIES OF ATTRIBUTES, CALLED VERBS IN THE STRICTEST SENSE.

^(a) *Marc. Antonin.* L. VI. § 30.

* *Church Hist.* B. VIII. p. 21.

CHAP. X.

Concerning those other Attributives, Particles and Adjectives.

THE nature of Verbs being understood, that of PARTICLES is no way difficult. Every complete Verb is expressive of an *Attribute*; of *Time*; and of *an Assertion*. Now if we take away *the Assertion*, and thus destroy the *Verb*, there will remain the *Attribute* and the *Time*, which make the essence of a PARTICIPLE. Thus take away the Assertion from the Verb, *Γράφει*, *Writeth*, and there remains the Participle, *Γράφων*, *Writing*, which (without the Assertion) denotes *the same Attribute*, and *the same Time*. After the same manner, by withdrawing the Assertion, we discover *Γράψας* in *Ἔγραψε*, *Γράψων* in *Γράψει*,

for we chuse to refer to the *Greek*, as being of all languages the most complete, as well in this respect as in others.

AND so much for PARTICLES.^a

^a The *Latin* are defective in this Article of Participles. Their Active Verbs, ending in *or* (commonly called Deponents), have Active Participles of all Times (such as *Loquens*, *Locutus*, *Locuturus*), but none of the Passive. Their Actives ending in *O*, have Participles of the Present and Future (such as *Scribens* and *Scripturus* but none of the Past. On the contrary, their Passives have Participles of the Past (such as *Scriptus*) but none of the Present or Future, unless we admit such as *Scribendus* and *Docendus* for Futures, which Grammarians controvert. The want of these Participles they supply by a Periphrasis—for γράψας they say *cum scribeisset*—for γραφόμενος, *dam scribitur*, &c. In *English* we have sometimes recourse to the same Periphrasis; and sometimes we avail ourselves of the same Auxiliars which form our Modes and Tenses.

The *English* Grammar lays down a good rule with respect to its Participles of the Past, that they all terminate in D, T, or N. This Analogy is perhaps liable to as few Exceptions as any. Considering therefore how little Analogy of any kind we have in our Language, it seems

THE nature of *Verbs* and *Participles* being understood, that of **ADJECTIVES** becomes easy. A *Verb* implies (as we have said) both an *Attribute*, and *Time*, and an *Assertion*; a *Participle* only implies an *Attribute*, and *Time*; and an **ADJECTIVE** only implies an *Attribute*; that is to say, in other Words, an **ADJECTIVE** has no *Assertion*, and only denotes such an *Attribute* as has not its essence either in *Motion* or its *Privation*. Thus in general the Attributes of quantity, quality, and relation (such as *many* and *few*, *great* and *little*, *black* and *white*, *good* and *bad*, *double*

wrong to annihilate the few Traces that may be found. It would be well, therefore, if all writers who endeavour to be accurate, would be careful to avoid a corruption, at present so prevalent, of saying, *it was wrote*, for, *it was written*; *he was drove*, for, *he was driven*; *I have went*, for, *I have gone*, &c. in all which instances a *Verb* is absurdly used to supply the proper *Participle*, without any necessity from the want of such Word.

treble, quadruple, &c.) are all denoted by
ADJECTIVES.

It must indeed be confessed, that sometimes even those Attributes, which are wholly foreign to the idea of *Motion*, assume an assertion, and appear as Verbs. Of such we gave instances before, in *albo*, *tumeo*, *italω*, and others. These however, compared to the rest of Verbs, are but few in number, and may be called if thought proper, *Verbal Adjectives*. It is in like manner, that Participles insensibly pass over into Adjectives. Thus *doctus* in *Latin*, and *learned* in *English*, lose their power, as *Participles*, and mean a Person possessed of an habitual Quality. Thus *Vir eloquens* means not *a man now speaking*, but a man, who possesses the habit of speaking, whether he speak or no. So when we say in *English* he is a *thinking Man*, an *understanding Man*, we mean not a person, whose mind is *in actual Energy*, but whose *mind is en-*

riched with a larger portion of those powers. It is indeed no wonder, as all *Attributives* are homogeneous, that at times the several species should appear to interfere, and the difference between them be scarcely perceptible. Even in *natural* species, which are congenial and of kin, the specific difference is not always to be discerned, and in appearance at least they seem to run into each other.

WE have shewn already ⁽¹⁾ in the Instances of Φιληππίζεν, *Syllaturire*, Ἀποκασταρωθῆναι, and others, how *Substantives* may be transformed into *Verbal Attributives*. We shall now shew, how they may be converted into *Adjectives*. When we say the party of *Pompey*, the stile of *Cicero*, the philosophy of *Socrates*, in these cases the party, the stile, and the philosophy spoken

⁽¹⁾ Sup. p. 182, 183.

of, receive a stamp and character from the persons whom they respect. Those persons therefore perform the part of Attributes, that is, stamp and characterize their respective Subjects. Hence then *they actually pass into Attributes*, and assume, as such, the form of *Adjectives*. And thus it is we say, the *Pompeian* party; the *Ciceronian* stile, and the *Socratic* philosophy. It is in like manner for a trumpet of *Brass* we say a *brazen* Trumpet; for a Crown of *Gold*, a *golden* Crown, &c. Even *Pronominal* Substantives admit the like mutation. Thus instead of saying, the Book of *Me*, of *Thee*, and of *Him*, we say, *My* Book, *Thy* Book and *His* Book; instead of saying, the Country of *Us*, of *You*, and of *Them*, we say, *Our* Country, *Your* Country, and *Their* Country, which Words may be called so many *Pronominal Adjectives*.

It has been observed already, and must needs be obvious to all, that *Adjectives*,

as marking *Attributes*, can have no sex.^(c) And yet their having terminations conformable to the sex, number, and case of their Substantive, seems to have led grammarians into that strange absurdity of ranging them with Nouns, and separating them from Verbs, though with respect to these they are perfectly homogeneous; with respect to the others quite contrary. They are homogeneous with respect to Verbs, as both sorts denote *Attributes*; they are heterogeneous with respect to Nouns, as never properly denoting *Substances*. But of this we have spoken before.^(d)

THE ATTRIBUTIVES hitherto treated, that is to say, VERBS, PARTICIPLES, and ADJECTIVES, may be called ATTRIBUTIVES

^(c) Sup. p. 171.

^(d) Sup. C. VI. Note ^(a). See also C. III. p. 28. &c.

OF THE FIRST ORDER. The reason of this name will be better understood, when we have more fully discussed ATTRIBUTIVES OF THE SECOND ORDER, to which we now proceed in the following chapter.

CHAP. XI.

Concerning Attributives of the second Order.

AS the Attributives hitherto mentioned denote *the Attributes of Substances*, so there is an inferior class of them, which denote *the Attributes only of Attributes*.

To explain by examples in either kind —when we say, *Cicero and Pliny were both of them eloquent*; *Statius and Virgil both of them wrote*; in these instances the Attributives *eloquent* and *wrote*, are immediately referable to the substantives, *Cicero*, *Virgil*, &c. As therefore denoting THE ATTRIBUTES OF SUBSTANCES, we call them ATTRIBUTIVES OF THE FIRST ORDER. But when we say, *Pliny was moderately eloquent*, but *Cicero exceedingly eloquent*; *Statius wrote indifferently*, but *Virgil wrote admir-*

ably; in these instances, the *Attributives*, *Moderately*, *Exceedingly*, *Indifferently*, *Admirably*, are not referable to *Substantives*, but to other *Attributives*, that is, to the words, *Eloquent*, and *Wrote*. As therefore denoting *Attributes of Attributes*, we call them ATTRIBUTIVES OF THE SECOND ORDER.

GRAMMARIANS have given them the Name of Ἐπιφήματα, ADVERBIA, ADVERBS. And indeed if we take the word Ρῆμα, or, *Verb*, in its most comprehensive Signification, as including not only *Verbs properly so called*, but also *Participles* and *Adjectives* [an usage, which may be justified by the best authorities^(a)] we shall find

^(a) Thus Aristotle in his *Treatise de Interpretatione*, instances Ἀνθρωπος as a *Noun*, and Δεῦκος as a *Verb*. So Ammonius—κατὰ τότο τὸ σημαινόμενον, τῷ μὲν ΚΑΛΟΣ ἢ ΔΙΚΑΙΟΣ ἢ δσα τοιαῦτα—ΡΗΜΑΤΑ λέγεσθαι ἢ ὅνοματα. According to this Signification (that is of

the name, *Ἐπίφρυνα*, or ADVERB, to be a very just appellation, as denoting A PART OF SPEECH, THE NATURAL APPENDAGE OF VERBS. So great is this dependence in Grammatical Syntax, that an *Adverb* can no more subsist without its *Verb*, than a *Verb* can subsist without its *Substantive*. It is the same here as in certain natural Subjects. Every Colour for its existence as much requires a Superficies, as the Superficies for its existence requires a solid body.^(*)

denoting the Attributes of Substance and the Predicate in Propositions) the words, FAIR, JUST, and the like, are called VERBS, and not NOUNS. *An. in libr. de Interp.* p. 37. b. *Arist. de Interp.* L. I. c. 1. See also of this Treatise, c. 6. Note ^(*) p. 87.

In the same manner the Stoicks talked of the Participle. *Nam PARTICIPIUM connumerantes Verbis, PARTICIPIALE VERBUM vocabant vel CASUALE. Priscian.* L. I. p. 574.

^(*) This notion of ranging the *Adverb* under the same Genus with the *Verb* (by calling them both *Attributives*) and of explaining it to be the *Verb's Epithet or Adjective*

AMONG the Attributes of Substance are reckoned Quantities, and Qualities. Thus we say, *a white Garment, a high Mountain*. Now some of these Quantities and Qualities are capable of Intension, and Remission. Thus we say, *a Garment, EXCEEDINGLY white; a Mountain TOLERABLY high, or MODERATELY high*. It is plain

(by calling it the Attributive of an Attributive) is conformable to the best authorities. *Theodore Gaza* defines an Adverb, as follows—μέρος λόγῳ ἀπτωτον, κατὰ ρήματος λεγόμενον, ή ἐπιλεγόμενον ρήματι, η̄ οἷον ἐπίθετον ρήματος. *A Part of Speech devoid of Cases, predicated of a Verb, or subjoined to it, and being as it were the Verb's Adjective.* L. IV. (where by the way we may observe, how properly the Adverb is made an *Aptote*, since its principal sometimes has cases, as in *Valde Sapiens*; sometimes has none, as in *Valde amat.*) *Priscian's* definition of an Adverb is as follows—ADVERBIUM est pars orationis indeclinabilis, cuius significatio Verbis adjicitur. *Hoc enim perficit Adverbium Verbis additum, quod adjectiva nomina appellativis nominibus adjuncta; ut prudens homo; prudenter egit; felix Vir; feliciter vivit.* L. XV. p. 1003. And before, speaking of the *Stoics*, he says—*Etiam ADVERBIA Nominibus vel VERBIS CONNUMERABANT, et quasi ADJECTIVA VERBORUM nominabant.* L. I. p. 574. See also *Apoll. de Synt.* L. I. c. 8. sub fin.

therefore that Intension and Remission are among the Attributes of such Attributes. Hence then one copious Source of secondary Attributives, or Adverbs, to denote these two, that is, *Intension*, and *Remission*. The Greeks have their θαυμασῶς, μάλιστα, τώρω, ἕπειτα; the Latins, their *valdè*, *vehementer*, *maximè*, *satis*, *mediocriter*; the English, their *greatly*, *vastly*, *extremely*, *sufficiently*, *moderately*, *tolerably*, *indifferently*, &c.

FARTHER than this, where there are different Intensions of the same Attribute, they may be *compared* together. Thus if the Garment A be EXCEEDINGLY *White*, and the Garment B be MODERATELY *White*, we may say, *the Garment A is MORE white than the Garment B*.

IN these instances the Adverb MORE not only denotes Intension, but *relative Intension*. Nay, we stop not here. We

not only denote Intension *merely relative*, but *relative Intension*, than which there is none greater. Thus we not only say *the Mountain A is MORE high than the Mountain B*, but that *it is the most high of all Mountains*. Even *Verbs*, properly so called, as they admit *simple Intensions*, so they admit also these *comparative ones*. Thus in the following Example—*Fame he LOVETH MORE than Riches, but Virtue of all things he LOVETH MOST*—the Words **MORE** and **most** denote the different *comparative Intensions* of the Verbal Attributive, *Loveth*.

AND hence the rise of **COMPARISON**, and of its different *Degrees*; which cannot well be more than the two Species above mentioned, one to denote *Simple Excess*, and one to denote *Superlative*. Were we indeed to introduce *more* degrees than these, we ought perhaps to introduce *infinite*, which is absurd. For why stop

at a limited Number, when in all subjects, susceptible of Intension, the intermediate Excesses are in a manner infinite? There are infinite degrees of *more* White, between the *first Simple White*, and the *Superlative, Whitest*; the same may be said of *more* Great, *more* Strong, *more* Minute, &c. The Doctrine of Grammarians about *three* such Degrees, which they call the Positive, the Comparative, and the Superlative, must needs be absurd; both because in their Positive there is† no Comparison at all, and because their *Superlative* is a Comparative, as much as their *Comparative* itself. Examples to evince this may be found every where. *Socrates was the most wise of all the Athenians—Homer was the most sublime of all Poets—*

—*Cadit et Ripheus, JUSTISSIMUS UNUS
Qui fuit in Teucris—*

Virg.

+ *Qui (scil. Gradus Positivis) quoniam perfectus est, a quibusdam in numero Graduum non computatur. Consentii Ars apud Putsch. p. 2022.*

IT must be confessed these Comparatives, as well the *simple* as the *superlative*, seem sometimes to part with their *relative* Nature, and only retain their *intensive*. Thus in the Degree, denoting *simple Excess*,

Tristior, et lacrumis oculos suffusa nitentes. Virg.
Rusticior paulo est— Hor.

IN the *Superlative* this is more usual. *Vir doctissimus, Vir fortissimus, a most learned Man, a most brave Man*,—that is to say, not the *bravest and most learned Man* that ever existed, but a man possessing those Qualities *in an eminent Degree*.

THE Authors of Language have contrived a method to retrench these Comparative Adverbs, by expressing their force in the Primary Attributive. Thus instead of *More fair*, they say FAIRER; instead of *Most fair*, FAIREST, and the same holds true both in the *Greek* and *Latin*. This Practice however has reached no farther

than to *Adjectives*, or at least to *Participles*, sharing the nature of *Adjectives*. Verbs perhaps were thought too much diversified already, to admit more Variations without perplexity.

As there are some *Attributives*, which admit of Comparison, so there are others, which admit of none. Such for example are those, which denote *that Quality of Bodies arising from their Figure*; as when we say, a *Circular Table*, a *Quadrangular Court*, a *Conical Piece of Metal*, &c. The reason is, that a million of things, participating the same Figure, participate it *equally*, if they participate it at all. To say therefore that while A and B are both quadrangular, A is *more or less* quadrangular than B, is absurd. The same holds true in all *Attributives*, denoting *definite Quantities*, whether *continuous* or *discrete*, whether *absolute* or *relative*. Thus the *two-foot Rule A* cannot be *more a two-foot Rule*, than any

other of the same length. *Twenty Lions* cannot be *more twenty*, than *twenty Flies*. If A and B be both *triple*, or *quadruple* to C, they cannot be *more triple*, or *more quadruple*, one than the other. The reason of all this is, there can be *no Comparison* without *Intension and Remission*; there can be no Intension and Remission in things *always definite*; and such are the Attributives, which we have last mentioned.

In the same reasoning we see the cause, why *no Substantive* is susceptible of these Comparative degrees. *A Mountain* cannot be said **MORE TO BE**, or **TO EXIST**, than a *Mole-hill*, but the *More* and *Less* must be sought for in their quantities. In like manner, when we refer many Individuals to one Species, the *Lion A* cannot be called *more a Lion*, than the *Lion B*, but if more any thing, he is *more fierce*, *more speedy*, or exceeding in some such Attribute. So again, in referring many Species to one

Genus, a Crocodile is not more an Animal, than a Lizard; nor a Tiger, more than a Cat, but if any thing, they are *more bulky, more strong, &c.* the Excess, as before, being derived from their Attributes. So true is that saying of the acute Stagirite—that **SUBSTANCE** is not susceptible of **MORE and LESS.**^(*) But this by way of digression, to return to the subject of Adverbs.

Of the Adverbs, or secondary Attributives already mentioned, these denoting Intension or Remission may be called Adverbs of *Quantity continuous*; *Once, Twice, Thrice*, are Adverbs of *Quantity discrete*; *More and Most, Less and Least*, to which may be added *Equally, Proportionally, &c.*

^(*) ὡς ἀν ἐπιδέχοτο η ἔστα τὸ μᾶλλον ἢ τὸ λιττόν,
Categor. c. 5. See also Sanctius, L. I. c. 11. L. II.
c. 10, 11. where the subject of Comparatives is treated
in a very masterly and philosophical manner. See also
Priscian, p. 598. *Derivantur igitur Comparativa a No-*
minibus Adjectivis, &c.

are Adverbs of *Relation*. There are others of *Quality*, as when we say, *HONESTLY industrious*, *PRUDENTLY brave*, *they fought BRAVELY*, *he painted FINELY*, a *Portico formed CIRCULARLY*, *a Plain cut TRIANGULARLY*, &c.

AND here it is worth while to observe, how the same thing, participating the same Essence, assumes different grammatical Forms from its different relations. For example, suppose it should be asked, how differ *Honest*, *Honestly*, and *Honesty*. The Answer is, they are *in Essence* the same, but they differ, in as much as *Honest* is the *Attributive of a Substantive*; *Honestly*, *of a Verb*; and *Honesty*, being divested of these its attributive Relations, assumes the *Power of a Substantive*, so as to stand by itself.

THE Adverbs, hitherto mentioned, are common to *Verbs of every Species*; but

there are some, which are peculiar to *Verbs properly so called*, that is to say, to such as denote *Motion* or *Energy*, with their *Privations*. All *MOTION* and *REST* imply *TIME* and *PLACE*, as a kind of necessary *Coincidents*. Hence, then, if we would express the *Place* or *Time* of either, we must needs have recourse to the proper Adverbs; *of Place*, as when we say, *he stood THERE*; *he went HENCE*; *he travelled FAR*, &c. *of Time*, as when we say, *he stood THEN*; *he went AFTERWARD*; *he travelled FORMERLY*, &c. Should it be asked——why *Adverbs of Time*, when Verbs have *Tenses*? The Answer is, though Tenses may be sufficient to denote the greater Distinctions of Time, yet to denote them all by Tenses would be a perplexity without end. What a variety of Forms, to denote *Yesterday*, *To-day*, *To-morrow*, *Formerly*, *Lately*, *Just now*, *Now*, *Immediately*, *Presently*, *Soon*, *Hereafter*, &c. It was this then that made the *Tem-*

poral Adverbs necessary, over and above the Tenses.

To the Adverbs just mentioned may be added those which denote the *Intensions and Remissions peculiar to Motion*, such as *speedily, hastily, swiftly, slowly, &c.* as also *Adverbs of Place, made out of Prepositions*, such as *ἀνω* and *κάτω* from *ἀνα* and *κατὰ*, in *English upward* and *downward*, from *up* and *down*. In some instances the Preposition suffers no change, but becomes an Adverb by nothing more than its Application, as when we say, *CIRCA equitat, he rides ABOUT*; *PROPE cecidit, he was NEAR falling*; *Verum ne POST conferas culpam in me, But do not AFTER lay the blame on me.*^(a)

^(a) *Sosip. Charinii Inst. Gram.* p. 170. *Terent. Eun.*
Act. II. Sc. 3.

THESE are likewise *Adverbs of Interrogation*, such as *Where*, *Whence*, *Whither*, *How*; of which there is this remarkable, that when they lose their *Interrogative power*, they assume that of a *Relative*, so as even to represent the *Relative or Sub-junctive Pronoun*. Thus Ovid.

Et Seges est, ubi Troja fuit—

translated in our old *English Ballad*,

And Corn doth grow, WHERE Troy town stood.

That is to say, *Seges est in eo loco, IN QUO &c.* *Corn groweth in that place, IN WHICH &c.* the power of the *Relative*, being implied in the *Adverb*. Thus Terence,

*Hujusmodi mihi res semper comminiscere,
UBI me excarnifices— Heaut. IV. 6.*

where *ubi* relates to *res*, and stands for *quibus rebus*.

IT is in like manner that the *Relative Pronoun* upon occasion becomes an *Interrogative*, at least, in *Latin* and *English*. Thus *Horace*,

QUEM Virum aut Heroa lyrā, vel acri
Tibi sumes celebrare, Clio?

So *Milton*,

Who first seduc'd them to that foul revolt?

THE reason of all this is as follows. *The Pronoun* and *Adverbs* here mentioned are all alike, in their original character, **RELATIVES**. Even when they become *Interrogatives*, they lose not this character, but are still *Relatives*, as much as ever. The difference is, that *without* an *Interrogation*, they have reference to a *Subject* which is *antecedent*, *definite* and *known*; *with* an *Interrogation*, to a *Subject* which is *subsequent*, *indefinite*, and *unknown*, and which it is expected that the *Answer* should express and ascertain,

Who first seduc'd them?—

The very Question itself supposes a Seducer, to which though *unknown*, the Pronoun, Who, has a *reference*.

Th' infernal Serpent—

Here in the *Answer* we have the *Subject*, which was indefinite, ascertained; so that the Who in the *Interrogation* is (we see) as much a *Relative*, as if it had been said originally, without any interrogation at all, *It was the Infernal SERPENT, WHO first seduced them.*

AND thus is it that *Interrogatives* and *Relatives* mutually pass into each other.

AND so much for **ADVERBS**, peculiar to Verbs properly so called. We have already spoken of those which are common to all **Attributives**. We have likewise attempted to explain their general *Nature*, which we have found to consist in being *the Attri-*

butes of Attributes. There remains only to add, that ADVERBS may be derived from almost every part of Speech; from PREPOSITIONS, as when from *After* we derive *Afterwards*—from PARTICIPLES, and through these from *Verbs*, as when from *Know* we derive *Knowing*, and thence *Knowingly*; from *Scio Sciens*, and thence *Scienter*—from ADJECTIVES, as when from *Virtuous* and *Vicious*, we derive *Virtuously* and *Viciously*—from SUBSTANTIVES as when from Πίθηκος, *an Ape*, we derive Πίθηκειον βλέπειν, *to look Apishly*: from Λέων, *a Lion*, Λεονίωδῶς, *Leoninely*—nay even from PROPER NAMES, as when from *Socrates* and *Demosthenes*, we derive *Socratically* and *Demosthenically*. It was Socratically reasoned, we say; it was Demosthenically spoken.* Of the same sort are many others, cited by the old Gramma-

* Aristotle has Κυκλοπικῶς *Cyclopically*, from Κύκλωψ *a Cyclops*. Eth. Nic. X. 9.

rians, such as *Catiliniter* from *Catilina*, *Sisenniter* from *Sisenna*, *Tullianè* from *Tullius*, &c.^(*)

Nor are they thus extensive only in *Derivation*, but in *Signification* also. *Theodore Gaza* in his Grammar informs us,^(*) that **ADVERBS** may be found in every one of the *Predicaments*, and that the readiest way to reduce their Infinitude, was to refer them by classes to those ten universal *Genera*. The *Stoicks* too called the **ADVERB** by the name of *Πανδέκτης*, and that from a view to the same *multiform Nature*. *Omnia in se capit quasi collata per satiram, concessâ sibi rerum variâ potestate*. It is thus that *Sosipater* explains the

^(*) See *Prisc.* L. XV. p. 1022. *Sos. Charis.* 161. Edit. *Putschii*.

^(*)—διὸ δὴ ἡ ἀμεινον ἵσως δέκα ἡ τῶν ἐπιφρόημάτων γένη
δίσθαι ἐκεῖνα, ὑσίαν, πειδν, ποσὸν, πρός τι, κ. τ. λ. Gram.
Introd. L. II.

Word," from whose authority we know it to be *Stoical*. But of this enough.

And now having finished those PRINCIPAL PARTS of Speech, the SUBSTANTIVE and the ATTRIBUTIVE, which are SIGNIFICANT WHEN ALONE, we proceed to those AUXILIARY PARTS, which are ONLY SIGNIFICANT WHEN ASSOCIATED. But as these make the Subject of a Book by themselves, we here conclude the first Book of this Treatise.

[“] *Sosip. Char.* p. 175. Edit. *Puteschii*.



H E R M E S
OR
A PHILOSOPHICAL INQUIRY
CONCERNING
UNIVERSAL GRAMMAR.

BOOK II.

CHAP. I.

Concerning Definitives.

WHAT remains of our Work, is a matter of less difficulty, it being the same here, as in some Historical Picture ; when the principal Figures are once formed, it is an easy labour to design the rest.

DEFINITIVES, the Subject of the present Chapter, are commonly called by Grammarians, ARTICLES, ΑΡΤΙΚΛΙΑ *Ap̄θεα*. They are of two kinds, either those *properly and strictly so called*, or else the *Pro-*

nominal Articles, such as *This, That, Any &c.*

We shall first treat of those *Articles more strictly so denominated*, the reason and use of which may be explained, as follows.

THE visible and individual Substances of Nature are infinitely more numerous, than for each to admit of a particular Name. To supply this defect, when any Individual occurs, which either wants a proper Name, or whose proper Name is not known, we ascertain it, as well as we can, by referring it to its Species ; or, if the Species be unknown, then at least to some Genus. For example—a certain Object occurs, with a head and limbs, and appearing to possess the powers of Self-motion and Sensation. If we know it not as an Individual, we refer it to its proper Species, and call it *Dog*, or *Horse*, or *Lion*.

or the like. If none of these Names fit, we go to the Genus and call it, *Animal*.

But this is not enough. The Thing, at which we are looking, is neither a Species, nor a Genus. What is it then? An Individual.—Of what kind? *Known* or *unknown*? Seen now *for the first time* or *seen before*, and now remembered?—It is here we shall discover the use of the two Articles (A) and (THE.) (A) respects our *primary Perception*, and denotes Individuals as *unknown*; (THE) respects our *secondary Perception* and denotes individuals as *known*. To explain by an example. I see an object pass by, which I never saw till now. What do I say?—*There goes a Beggar with a long Beard*. The Man departs, and returns a week after. What do I say then?—*There goes THE Beggar with THE long Beard*. The Article only is changed, the rest remains un-altered.

YET mark the force of this apparently minute Change. The Individual, *once vague*, is now recognized *as something known*, and that merely by the efficacy of this latter Article, which tacitly insinuates a kind of *previous acquaintance*, by referring the present Perception to a like Perception already past.^(a)

The Truth is, the Articles (A) and (THE) are both of them *Definitives*, as they circumscribe the latitude of Genera and Species, by reducing them for the most part to denote Individuals. The difference however between them is this; the Article (A) leaves the Individual itself *unascertained*, whereas the Article (THE) *ascertains the Individual also*, and is for that reason the more accurate Definitive of the two.

^(a) See B. I. c. 5. p. 63. 64.

It is perhaps owing to the imperfect manner, in which the Article (A) defines, that the *Greeks* have no Article correspondent to it, but supply its place, by a negation of their Article ‘O. ‘Ο ἄνθρωπος ἐπεσεν, *The man fell*—ἄνθρωπος ἐπεσεν, *A Man fell*, without anything prefixed, but only the Article withdrawn.^(*) Even in *English*, where the Article (A) cannot be used, as in plurals, its force is express

^(*) Τὰ γὰρ, ἀορισθῶς πότε νοθμενα, ἡ τὸ ἄρθρος παράθεσις ὑπὸ δρισμὸν τῷ προσώπῳ ἀγει. *Those things, which are at times understood indefinitely, the addition of the Article makes to be definite as to their Person.* Apoll.-L. IV. c. I. See of the same author, L. I. c. 6, 36. ποιεῖ (τὸ ἄρθρον sc.) δ' ἀναπόλησιν προεγνωσμένα τὸ ἐν τῇ συντάξει οἷον εἰ μὲν λέγοι τις, ΑΝΘΡΩΠΟΣ ΗΚΕ, ἀδηλον τίνα ἄνθρωπον λέγει. εἰ δὲ Ο ΑΝΘΡΩΠΟΣ, δῆλον, προεγνωσμένον γὰρ τινα ἄνθρωπον λέγει. Τέτο δὲ αὐτὸ βέλονται ἡ οἱ φάσκοντες τ' ἄρθρον σημαντικὸν πρώτης γνώσεως ἡ δευτέρας. *The Article causes a Review within the Mind of something known before the texture of the Discourse. Thus if any one says "Ανθρωπος ηκε, MAN CAME (which is the same as when we say in English A man*

by the same Negation. *Those are THE Men*, means those are individuals, of which we possess some *previous Knowledge*. *Those are Men*, the Article apart, means no more than that they are so many *vague* and *uncertain Individuals*, just as the Phrase, *A Man*, in the singular, implies one of the same number.

BUT though the *Greeks* have no Article correspondent to the Article (A), yet nothing can be more nearly related, than their 'O, to the Article THE. 'Ο βασιλεὺς, THE King; TO δῶρον, THE Gift, &c. Nor is this only to be proved by parallel ex-

(some) it is not evident, of whom he speaks. But if he says ὁ ἄνθρωπος ἡτο THE MAN CAME, then it is evident; for he speaks of some Person known before. And this is what those mean, who say that the Article is expressive of the First and Second Knowledge together. Theod. Gaza. L. IV,

amples, but by the Attributes of the Greek Article, as they are described by *Apollonius*, one of the earliest and most acute of the old Grammarians, now remaining.

Ἐξη δὲ καθὸ καὶ ἐν ἄλλοις ἀπεφινάμεθα,
τίδιον ἄρθρων ἡ ἀναφορὰ, οὐκέτι τροχατεῖλεγμένα
τροσώπα ταρασσατικά.—Now the peculiar
Attribute of the Article as we have shown
elsewhere, is that Reference, which implies
some certain Person already mentioned. Again
Οὐ γὰρ δῆγε τά ὄνόματα ἐξ αὐτῶν ἀναφορὰν
παριζησον, εἰ μὴ συμπαραλάβοιεν τὸ ἄρθρον, οὐ
ἔξαιρετός ἐστιν ἡ ἀναφορά. For Nouns of them-
selves imply not Reference, unless they take
to them the Article, whose peculiar Character
is Reference. Again—Τὸ ἄρθρον τρούφεισῶσαν
γνῶσιν δηλᾶ—The Article indicates a pre-
established acquaintance.^(*)

^(*) *Apoll. de Synt. L. I. c. 6, 7.* His account of Re-

His reasoning upon *Proper Names* is worth remarking. Proper Names (he tells us) often fall into *Homonymie*, that is, different Persons often go by the same Name. To solve this ambiguity, we have recourse to *Adjectives* or *Epithets*. For example —there were two *Grecian* chiefs who bore the name of *Ajax*. It was not therefore without reason, that *Menestheus* uses Epithets, when this intent was to distinguish the one of them from the other.

Ἄλλα τερ οἵτοι ἵτω Τελαμόνιοι ἀλκιμοί Αἴας.

Hom.

If both Ajaxes (says he) *cannot be spared,*
—at least alone
Let mighty Telamonian Ajax come.

Apollonius proceeds — Even Epithets

ERENCE is as follows—'Ιδίωμα ἀναφορᾶς προκατειλεγμένης προσώπες δευτέρα γνῶσις. The peculiar character of Reference is the second or repeated Knowledge of some Person already mentioned. L. II. c. 3..

themselves are diffused through various Subjects, in as much as the same Adjective may be referred to many Substantives.

In order therefore to render both Parts of Speech equally definite, that is to say the Adjective as well as the Substantive, the Adjective itself assumes *an Article* before it, that it may indicate *a Reference to some single Person only*, μοναδικὴ ἀναφορά, according to the Author's own Phrase. And thus it is we say, Τρύφων δὲ Γραμματίκος, *Trypho the Grammian*; Απολλόδωρος δὲ Κυρηναῖος, *Apollodorus the Cyrenean*, &c. The Author's Conclusion of this Section is worth remarking. Δεόντως ἄρα καὶ κατὰ τὸ τοιότον ἡ ωρόσθεσίς ἔσι τῷ ἀρθρῷ, συνιδιάζεται τὸ ἐπιθετικὸν τῷ κυρίῳ ὄνοματι—*It is with reason therefore that the Article is here also added, as it brings the Adjec-*

tive to an *Individuality*, as precise as the proper Name."¹⁴

WE may carry this reasoning farther, and shew, how by help of the *Article* even common Appellatives come to have the force of proper Names, and that unassisted by epithets of any kind. Among the Athenians Πλοῖον meant *Ship*; Ἐνδεκα, *Eleven*; and Ἀνθρωπος, *Man*. Yet add but the Article, and Τὸ Πλοῖον, THE SHIP meant that particular *Ship*, which they sent annually to Delos; Of Ἐνδεκα, THE ELEVEN, meant certain officers of Justice; and Οὐ Ανθρωπος, THE MAN, meant their public Executioner. So in English, City is a Name common to many places; and Speaker, a name common to many

¹⁴ See *Apoll.* L. I. & 12. where by mistake Menelaus is put for Menestheus.

Men. Yet if we prefix the Article, THE CITY means our Metropolis; and THE SPEAKER, *a high Officer* in the British Parliament.

AND thus it is by an easy transition, that the Article, from denoting *Reference*, comes to denote *Eminence* also; that is to say, from implying an *ordinary* pre-acquaintance, to presume a kind of *general and universal Notoriety*. Thus among the Greeks 'Ο Ποιητής, THE POET, meant *Homer*;^(c) and 'Ο Σταγειρίτης, THE STAGIRITE meant *Aristotle*; not that there were not many Poets, beside *Homer*; and many Stagirites, beside *Aristotle*; but none

^(c) There are so few exceptions to this Observation, that we may fairly admit it to be generally true. Yet *Aristotle* twice denotes *Euripides* by the Phrase ὁ ποιητής, once at the end of the seventh Book of his *Nichomachian Ethics* and again in his *Physics*, L. II. 2. *Plato* also in his tenth Book of *Laws* (p. 901. *Edit. Serr.*) denotes *Herod* after the same manner.

equally illustrious for their Poetry and Philosophy.

IT is on a like principle that *Aristotle* tells us, it is by no means the same thing to assert—*εἶναι τὴν ἡδονὴν ἀγαθὸν*, or, TO *ἀγαθὸν*—that, *Pleasure is A Good, or THE Good.* The first only makes it a *common Object of Desire*, upon a level with many others, which daily raise our wishes; the last supposes it *that supreme and sovereign Good, the ultimate Scope of all our Actions and Endeavours.*^o

BUT to pursue our Subject. It has been said already that the Article has no meaning, but when associated to some other word.—To what words then may it be associated?—To such as require *defining* for

^o *Analyt. Prior. L. I. c. 40.*

it is by nature a *Definitive*.—And *what Words* are these?—Not those which already are *as definite*, *as may be*. Nor yet those, which, *being indefinite*, *cannot properly be made otherwise*. It remains then they must be *those*, *which though indefinite, are yet capable, through the Article, of becoming definite*.

UPON these Principles we see the reason, why it is absurd to say, Ο ΕΓΩ, ΤΗΕ I, or Ο ΣΥ, ΤΗΕ THOU, because nothing can make those Pronouns more *definite*, than they are.^(*) The same may be asserted

^(*) *Apollonius* makes it part of the Pronoun's Definition, to refuse co-alescence with the Article. Ἐκεῖνο ἐν Ἀντωνίῳ, τὸ μετὰ δεῖξεως ἡ ἀναφορᾶς ἀντονομαζόμενον, ϕέσις σύνεσι τὸ ἄρθρον. *That therefore is a Pronoun, which with Indication or Reference is put for a Noun, and with WHICH THE ARTICLE DOTHE NOT ASSOCIATE.* L. II. c. 5. So *Gaza*, speaking of Pronouns—Πάντη δὲ—σκέπιδέχονται ἄρθρον. L. IV. *Priscian* says the same. *Jure igitur apud Græcos prima et secunda persona pro-*

of Proper Names, and though the *Greeks* say δ Σωκράτης, ἡ Εάνθηπη, and the like, yet the Article is a mere Pleonasm, unless perhaps it serve to distinguish Sexes. By the same rule we cannot say in *Greek* ΟΙ ΑΜΦΟΤΕΠΟΙ, or in *English*, THE BOTH, because these Words *in their own nature* are each of them perfectly *defined*, so that to define them farther would be quite superfluous. Thus if it be said, *I have read* BOTH Poets, this plainly indicates a definite pair, of whom some mention has been made already; Δυάς ἔγνωσμένη, a known Duad, as *Apollonius* expresses himself,^(A) when he speaks of this Subject. On the contrary, if it be said *I have read*

nominum, quæ sine dubio demonstratiæ sunt, articulis adjungi non possunt; nec tertia, quando demonstrativa est. L. XII. p. 938.—In the beginning of the same Book, he gives the true reason of this. *Supra omnes alias partes orationis FINIT PERSONAS PRONOMEN.*

^(A) *Apollon.* L. I. c. 16.

Two Poets, this may mean *any Pair* out of all that ever existed. And hence this Numeral, being in this Sense *indefinite* (as indeed are all others, as well as itself) is forced to assume the Article, whenever it would become *definite*.* And thus it is, THE Two in English, and ΟΙ ΔΥΟ in Greek, mean nearly the same thing, as Both or ΑΜΦΟΤΕΠΟΙ. Hence also it is, that as Two, when taken alone, has reference to some *primary* and *indefinite* Perception, while the Article, THE, has reference to some *secondary* and *definite*; † hence I say the Reason, why it is bad Greek to say ΔΥΟ ΟΙ ΑΝΘΡΩΠΟΙ, and bad English, to say Two THE MEN. Such

* This explains Servius on the XIIth Aeneid. v. 511. where he tells us that *Duorum* is put for *Amborum*. In English or Greek the Article would have done the business, for the Two, or τοῖν δύοιν are equivalent to Both or ἀμφοτέρων, but not so *Duorum*, because the Latins have no Articles as prefix.

† Sup. p. 215, 216.

Syntax is in fact a *Blending of Incompatibles*, that is to say of a *defined Substantive* with an *undefined Attributive*. On the contrary to say in *Greek* ΑΜΦΟΤΕΡΟΙ ΟΙ ΑΝΘΡΩΠΟΙ, or in *English*, *Both THE MEN*, is good and allowable, because the Substantive cannot possibly be less apt, by being defined, to coalesce with an Attributive, which is defined as well as itself. So likewise it is correct to say, ΟΙ ΔΥΟ ΑΝΘΡΩΠΟΙ, *The Two Men*, because here the Article, being placed in the beginning, *extends its Power* as well through Substantive as Attributive, and equally contributes to *define* them both.

As some of the words above admit of no Article, *because they are by Nature as definite as may be*, so there are others, which admit it not, *because they are not to be defined at all*. Of this sort are all **INTERROGATIVES**. If we question about

Substances, we cannot say Ο ΤΙΣ ΟΡΤΟΣ, THE WHO IS THIS; but ΤΙΣ ΟΥΤΟΣ, WHO IS THIS?^v The same as to *Qualities* and both kinds of *Quantity*. We say without an Article ΠΟΙΟΣ, ΠΟΣΟΙ ΠΗΛΙΚΟΣ, in *English*, WHAT SORT OF, HOW MANY, HOW GREAT. The Reason is, that the Articles 'Ο, and THE respect Beings, *already known*; Interrogatives respect Beings, *about which we are ignorant*; for as to what we know, Interrogation is superfluous.

IN a word, *the natural Associators with Articles*, are all those *common Appellatives*, which denote the several Genera and Species of Beings. It is these, which, by assuming a different *Article*, serve either to explain an Individual upon its first being

^v Apollonius calls ΤΙΣ, ἐναρτιώτατον τῶν ἄρθρων, a Part of Speech, *most contrary, most averse to Articles*. L. IV. c. 1.

perceived, or else to indicate, upon its return, a Recognition, or repeated Knowledge.^(*)

WE shall here subjoin a few Instances of the Peculiar Power of ARTICLES.

EVERY Proposition consists of a *Subject*, and a *Predicate*. In *English* these are distinguished by their Position, the *Subject* standing *first*, the *Predicate last*. *Happiness is Pleasure*—Here *Happiness* is the *Subject*; *Pleasure* the *Predicate*. If we change their order, and say, *Pleasure is Happiness*; then *Pleasure* becomes the *Subject*, and *Happiness* the *Predicate*. In *Greek* these are distinguished not by any Order or Position, but by help of the *Article*, which the *Subject* always assumes, and the *Predi-*

^(*) What is here said respects the two Articles, which we have in *English*. In *Greek*, the article does no more, than imply a *Recognition*. See before p. 216, 217, 218.

pate in most instances (some few excepted) rejects. *Happiness is Pleasure*—ἡδονὴ εὐδαιμονία—*Pleasure is Happiness*—ἡ ἡδονὴ εὐδαιμονία—*Fine things are difficult*—χαλεπά τὰ καλά—*Difficult things are fine*—τὰ χαλεπά καλά.

IN Greek it is worth attending, how in the same Sentence, the same Article, by being prefixed to a different Word, quite changes the whole meaning. For example—‘Ο Πτολεμαῖος γυμνασιαρχήσας ἐτιμήθη—*Ptolemy, having presided over the Games, was publicly honoured.* The Participle γυμνασιαρχήσας has here no other force, than to denote to us *the Time, when Ptolemy was honoured, viz. after having presided over the Games.* But if, instead of the Substantive, we join the Participle to the Article, and say, ‘Ο γυμνασιαρχήσας Πτολεμαῖος ἐτιμήθη, our meaning is then—*The Ptolemy, who presided over the Games,*

was honoured. The Participle in this case, *being joined to the Article*, tends tacitly to indicate not one *Ptolemy* but many, of which number a particular one participated of honour.^w

IN *English* likewise it deserves remarking, how the Sense is changed by changing of the *Articles*, though we leave every other Word of the Sentence untouched—
*And Nathan said unto David, THOU ART THE MAN.** In that single, THE, that diminutive Particle, all the force and efficacy of the Reason is contained. By that alone are the Premises applied, and so firmly fixed, as never to be shaken. It is possible this Assertion may appear at first somewhat strange; but let him who doubts it, only change the *Article*, and then see what will become of the Prophet and his

^w *Apollon.* L. I. c. 33, 34.

* ΣΥ ΕΙ 'Ο ΑΝΗΠ. Βασιλ. Β'. κεφ. 43'.

reasoning.—*And Nathan said unto David, Thou art a man.* Might not the King well have demanded upon so impertinent a position,

Non dices hodie, quorsum haec tam putida tendant?

BUT enough of such Speculations. The only remark, which we shall make on them, is this; that “ minute Change in “ PRINCIPLES leads to mighty Change in “ EFFECTS ; so that well are PRINCIPLES “ intitled to our regard, however *in appearance* “ they may be trivial and low.”

THE ARTICLES already mentioned are those *strictly* so called ; but besides these there are the PRONOMINAL ARTICLES, such as *This, That, Any, Other, Some, All, No, or None, &c.* Of these we have spoken already in our chapter of Pronouns,⁽ⁿ⁾

⁽ⁿ⁾ See B. I. c. 5. p. 72, 73. It seems to have been some view of words, like that here given, which induced Quintilian to say of the Latin tongue—*Noster sermo*

where we have shown, when they may be taken as Pronouns, and when as Articles. Yet in truth it must be confessed, if the Essence of an Article be *to define and ascertain*, they are much more properly Articles than any thing else, and as such should be considered in Universal Grammar. Thus when we say, *This Picture I approve, but THAT I dislike*, what do we perform by the help of these Definitives, but bring down the common Appellative to denote two Individuals, the one as *the more*

Articulos non desiderat; ideoque in alias partes orationis sparguntur. Inst. Orat. L. I. c. 4. So Scaliger. His declaratis, satis constat Græcorum Articulos non neglectos a nobis, sed eorum usum superfluum. Nam ubi aliquid præscribendum est, quod Græci per articulum efficiunt (Ἐλεῖν δὲ δῆλος) expletur a Latinis per Is aut ILLE; Is, aut, Ille servus dixit, de quo seruo antea facta mentio sit, aut qui alio quo pacto notus sit. Additur enim Articulus ad rei memoriam renovandam, cuius antea non nescii sumus, aut ad præscribendam intellectionem, quæ latius patere queat: veluti cum dicimus, C. Cæsar, Is qui postea dictator fuit. Nam alijs fuere C. Cæsares. Sic Græci Καῖσαρ ἡ αὐτοκράτωρ. De Caus. Ling. Lat. c. 131.

near the other as the more distant? So when we say, *Some men are virtuous, but All men are mortal*, what is the natural Effect of this *All* and *Some*, but to define that *Universality*, and *Particularity*, which would remain indefinite, were we to take them away? The same is evident in such Sentences, as—*Some substances have sensation; others want it—Chuse ANY way of acting, and some men will find fault, &c.* For here *SOME*, *OTHER*, and *ANY*, serve all of them to *define* different Parts of a given Whole; *SOME*, to denote a *definite Part*; *ANY*, to denote an *indefinite*; and *OTHER*, to denote the *remaining Part*, when a Part has been assumed already. Sometimes this last Word denotes a *large indefinite Portion*, set in opposition to some *single, definite, and remaining Part*, which receives from such Opposition no small degree of heightening. Thus *Virgil*,

*Excudent ALII spirantia mollius æra;
(Credo equidem) vivos ducent de marmore vultus;*

*Orabunt causas melius, cælique meatus
Describent radio, et surgentia sidera dicent:
Tu regere imperio populos, ROMANE, memento,
&c.* *AEn. VI.*

NOTHING can be stronger or more sublime, than this Antithesis; one *Act* set as equal to *many other Acts taken together*, and the Roman *singly* (for it is *Tu Romane*, not *Vos Romani*) to *all other Men*; and yet this performed by so trivial a cause, as the just opposition of *ALII* to *Tu*.

BUT here we conclude, and proceed to treat of CONNECTIVES.

CHAP. II.

*Concerning Connectives, and first those
called Conjunctions.*

CONNECTIVES are the subject of what follows ; which, according as they connect either *Sentences* or *Words*, are called by the different Names of CONJUNCTIONS, or PREPOSITIONS. Of these Names, that of the *Preposition* is taken from a *mere accident*, as it commonly stands in connection before the Part which it connects. The name of the *Conjunction*, as is evident, has reference to its *essential character*.

Of these two we shall consider the CONJUNCTION first, because it connects, not Words; but *Sentences*. This is conformable to the Analysis, with which we be-

gan this inquiry,* and which led us, by parity of reason, to consider *Sentences themselves before words*. Now the Definition of a CONJUNCTION is as follows—a *Part of speech, void of Signification itself, but so formed as to help Signification, by making two or more significant Sentences to be one significant Sentence.*^(a)

* Sup. p. 11, 12.

(a) Grammarians have usually considered the Conjunction as connecting rather *single parts of Speech*, than *whole Sentences*, and that too with the addition of like with like, Tense with Tense, Number with Number, Case with Case, &c. This Sanctius justly explodes. *Coniunctio neque casus, neque alias partes orationis (ut imperiti docent) conjungit, ipsæ enim partes inter se conjunguntur—sed conjunctio Orationes inter se conjungit.* Miner. L. III. c. 14. He then establishes his doctrine by a variety of examples. He had already said as much, L. I. c. 18. and in this he appears to have followed Scaliger, who had asserted the same before him. *Coniunctionis autem notionem veteres paullo inconsultius prodidere; neque enim, quod aiunt, partes alias conjungit (ipsæ enim partes per se inter se conjunguntur)—sed Coniunctio est, que conjungit Orationes plures.* De Caus. Ling. Lat. c. 165.

THIS therefore being the general Idea of CONJUNCTIONS, we deduce their Species

This Doctrine of theirs is confirmed by *Apollonius*, who in the several places, where he mentions the Conjunction, always considers it in Syntax as connecting *Sentences* and not Words, though in his works now extant he has not given us its Definition. See L. I. c. 2. p. 14. L. II. c. 12. p. 124. L. III. c. 15. p. 234.

But we have stronger authority than this to support *Scaliger* and *Sanctius*, and that is *Aristotle's* Definition, as the Passage has been corrected by the best Critics and Manuscripts. A Conjunction, according to him, is φωνὴ ἀσημικος, ἐκ πλειστων μὲν φωνῶν μίας, συγκατικῶν δὲ, τοιεῖν περικνήσαν φωνὴν σημαντικήν. *An articulate Sound, devoid of signification, which is so formed as to make ONE significant articulate Sound out of several articulate Sounds, which are each of them significant.* Poet. c. 20. In this view of things, the *one significant articulate Sound, formed by the Conjunction*, is not the Union of two or more Syllables in one simple Word, nor even of two or more Words in one simple Sentence, but of two or more *simple Sentences* in one *complex Sentence*, which is considered as *ONE*, from that Concatenation of Meaning effected by the *Conjunctions*. For example, let us take the Sentence which follows. *If Men are by nature social, it is their interest to be just, though it were not so*

in the following manner. CONJUNCTIONS, while they *connect sentences*, either connect

ordained by the Laws of their Country. Here are three Sentences. (1.) *Men are by nature social.* (2.) *It is Man's Interest to be just.* (3.) *It is not ordained by the Laws of every Country that Man should be just.* The first two of these Sentences are made *One* by the Conjunction, *If*; these, *One* with the third Sentence, by the Conjunction, *Tho'*; and the three, thus united, make that φωνὴ μία σημαντικὴ, *that one significant articulate Sound*, of which *Aristotle* speaks, and which is the result of the conjunctive Power.

This explains a passage in his Rhetoric, where he mentions the same Subject. Ο γὰρ σύνδεσμος ἐν ποιᾷ τὰ πολλά· ὅτε ἔαν ἔξαιρεθῇ, δῆλον δτι τανατίον ἔται τὸ ἐν πολλά. *The Conjunction makes many, ONE; so that if it be taken away, it is then evident on the contrary that one will be MANY.* Rhet. III. c. 12. His instance of a Sentence, divested of its Conjunctions, and thus made *many* out of *one*, is, ἥλθον, ἀπήντησα, ἐδεόμην, *veni, occurri, rogavi*, where by the way the three Sentences, resulting from this Dissolution (for ἥλθον, ἀπήντησα, and ἐδεόμην, are each of them, when unconnected, so many perfect Sentences), prove that these are the proper Subjects of the *Conjunction's* connective faculty.

also their meanings, or not. For example: let us take these two Sentences—*Rome was enslaved*—*Cæsar was ambitious*—and connect them together by the Conjunction, BECAUSE. *Rome was enslaved* BECAUSE *Cæsar was ambitious*. Here the Meanings, as well as the Sentences, appear to be connected. But if I say,—*Manners must be reformed, or Liberty will be lost*—here the Conjunction, OR, though it join the Sen-

Ammonius's account of the use of this Part of Speech is elegant. Διὸ δὲ τῶν λόγων ὁ μὲν ὑπαρξίν μίαν σημαίνων, ὁ κυρίως εἰς, ἀνάλογος ἀντὶ εἴη τῷ μηδέπω τετμητένῳ ξύλῳ, δὲ διὰ τοῦτο ἐνὶ λεγομένῳ ὁ δὲ πλείονας ὑπάρχεις δηλῶν, ἔνα (lege διὰ) τινὰ δὲ σύνδεσμον ἡνῶσθάν πως δοκῶν, ἀναλογεῖ τῷ νηὶ τῷ ἐκ πολλῶν συγκειμένην ξύλων, ὑπὸ δὲ τῶν γύμφων φαινομένην ἔχόσῃ τὴν ἔνωσιν. *Of Sentences, that which denotes one Existence simply, and which is strictly ONE, may be considered as analogous to a piece of Timber not yet severed, and called on this account One. That which denotes several Existences, and which appears to be made ONE by some Consecutive Particle, is analogous to a Ship made up of many pieces of Timber, and which by means of the nails has an apparent Unity.* Am. in Lib. de Interpret. p. 54, 6.

tences, yet as to their respective *Meanings*, is a perfect *Disjunctive*. And thus it appears, that though all Conjunctions *conjoin Sentences*, yet with respect to the *Sense*, some are **CONJUNCTIVE**, and some **DISJUNCTIVE**; and hence⁽⁶⁾ it is that we derive their different Species.

THE Conjunctions which *conjoin both Sentences and their Meanings*, are either **COPULATIVES** or **CONTINUATIVES**. The principal Copulative in *English* is, **AND**. The Continuatives are, **IF**, **BECAUSE**, **THEREFORE**, **THAT**, &c. The Difference between these is this—*The Copulative* does no more than barely *couple Sentences*, and is therefore applicable to all Subjects, whose Natures are *not incompatible*. *Continuatives*, on the contrary, by a more intimate connection, consolidate Sentences

⁽⁶⁾ Thus *Scaliger*. *Aut ergo Sensum conjungunt, ac Verba; aut Verba tantum conjungunt, Sensum vero disjungunt.* De C. L. Lat. c. 167.

into one continuous Whole, and are therefore applicable only to Subjects, which have an *essential Co-incidence*.

To explain by examples—It is no way improper to say, *Lysippus was a Statuary, AND Priscian was a Grammarian—The Sun shineth, AND the Sky is clear*—because these are things that may co-exist, and yet imply no absurdity. But it would be absurd to say, *Lysippus was a Statuary, BECAUSE Priscian was a Grammarian*; though not to say, *the Sun shineth, BECAUSE the Sky is clear*. The Reason is, with respect to the first, the *Co-incidence* is merely *accidental*; with respect to the last, it is *essential*, and founded in nature. And so much for the Distinction between *Copulatives* and *Continuatives*.^(o)

^(o) *Copulativa est, quæ copulat tam Verba, quam Sententias.* Thus *Priscian*, p. 1026. But *Scaliger* is more

As to *Continuatives*; they are either SUPPOSITIVE, such as, IF; or POSITIVE, such as, BECAUSE, THEREFORE, AS, &c. Take Examples of each—you will live happily, IF you live honestly—you will live happily, BECAUSE you live honestly. The difference between these Continuatives is this—The *Suppositives* denote Connection, but assert not actual Existence; the *Positives* imply both the one and the other.⁽⁴⁾

explicit—*sī Sensum conjungunt (conjunctiones sc.) aut necessariō, aut non necessariō; et si non necessariō, tūm fiunt Copulativæ, &c.* De C. Ling. Lat. c. 167. Priscian's own account of Continuatives is as follows. *Continuative sunt, quæ continuationem et consequentiam rerum significant*—ibid. Scaliger's account is—causam aut præstinentiūt, aut subdūnt. Ibid. c. 168. The Greek name for the Copulative was Σύνδεσμος συμπλεκτικός; for the Continuative, συναπτικός; the Etymologies of which words justly distinguish their respective characters.

⁽⁴⁾ The old Greek Grammarians confined the name Συναπτικοί, and the Latins that of *Continuativæ*, to those

FARTHER than this, the Positives above mentioned are either CAUSAL, such as, BECAUSE, SINCE, AS, &c. or COLLECTIVE, such as, THEREFORE, WHEREFORE, THEN, &c. The Difference between these is this—the *Causals* subjoin *Causes to Effects*—*The Sun is in Eclipse*,

Conjunctions, which we have called *Suppositive* or *Conditional*, while the Positive they called παρασυναπτικοί, or *Subcontinuative*. They agree however in describing their proper Characters. The first according to *Gaza* are, οἱ ὑπαρξίν μὲν ἔ, ἀκόλεθίαν δὲ τίνα καὶ τάξιν δηλῶντες—L. IV. *Priscian* says, they signify to us, *qualis est ordinatio et natura rerum, cum dubitatione aliquā essentia rerum*—p. 1027. And *Scaliger* says, they conjoin *sine subsistentiā necessariā*; *potest enim subsistere et non subsistere; utrumque enim admittunt*. Ibid. c. 168. On the contrary of the Positive, or παρασυναπτικοί (to use his own name) *Gaza* tells us, δτι καὶ ὑπαρξίν μερὰ τάξεως σημαίνεσσιν ἔτοιγε—And *Priscian* says, *causam continuationis ostendunt consequentem cum essentia rerum*—And *Scaliger*, *non ex hypothesi, sed ex eo, quod subsistit, conjungunt*. Ibid.

It may seem at first somewhat strange, why the *Posi-*

BECAUSE *the Moon intervenes*—*The Collectives* subjoin *Effects to Causes*—*The Moon intervenes*, THEREFORE *the Sun is in Eclipse*. Now we use *Causals* in those instances, where, the effect being conspicuous, we seek its Cause; and *Collectives*, in *Demonstrations*, and *Science properly so called*, where the Cause being

tive Conjunctions should have been considered as Subordinate to the Suppositive, which by their ancient Names appears to have been the fact. Is it, that the Positive are confined to what *actually is*; the Suppositive extend to *Possibles*, nay even as far as to *Impossibles*? Thus it is false to affirm, *As it is Day, it is Light*, unless it actually be Day. But we may at midnight affirm, *If it be Day, it is Light*, because the, *If*, extends to Possibles also. Nay we may affirm, by its help (if we please), even Impossibles. We may say, *If the Sun be cubical, then is the Sun angular*; *If the Sky fall, then shall we catch Larks*. Thus too Scaliger upon the same occasion—*amplitudinem Continuativa percipi ex eo, quod etiam impossibile absquando presupponit*. De C. L. Lat. C. 168. In this sense then the Continuative, Suppositive or Conditional Conjunction is (as it were) superior to the Positive, as being of greater latitude in its application.

known first, by its help we discern consequences."^o

ALL these *Continuatives* are resolvable into *Copulatives*. Instead of BECAUSE it is Day, it is light, we may say, It is Day, AND it is Light. Instead of, IF it be Day, it is Light, we may say, It is at the same time necessary to be Day, AND to be Light; and so in other Instances. The Reason is, that the Power of the *Copulative* extends to all Connections, as well to the *essential*, as to the *casual* or *fortuitous*. Hence therefore the *Continuative* may be resolved into a *Copulative and something more*, that is to say, into a *Copulative* implying an *essential Co-incidence*^o in the Subjects conjoined.

^(o) The Latins called the Causals, *Causales* or *Causativa*; the Collectives, *Collectiva* or *Illativa*: The Greeks called the former *Αἰτιολογικοί*, and the latter *Συλλογικοί*.

^(p) *Resolvuntur autem in Copulativas omnes haec, propter quod Causa cum Effectu Suâpte naturâ conjuncta est.* Scal. de C. L. Lat. c. 169.

As to the *Causal* Conjunctions (of which we have spoken already) there is no one of the four Species of Causes, which they are not capable of denoting: for example, THE MATERIAL CAUSE—*The Trumpet sounds, BECAUSE it is made of Metal*—THE FORMAL—*The Trumpet Sounds, BECAUSE it is long and hollow*—THE EFFICIENT—*The Trumpet sounds, BECAUSE an Artist blows it*—THE FINAL—*The Trumpet sounds, THAT it may raise our courage*. Where it is worth observing, that the three first Causes are express by the strong affirmation of the *Indicative Mode*, because if the Effect actually be, these must of necessity be also. But the last Cause has a different Mode, namely, the *Contingent* or *Potential*. The Reason is, that the Final Cause, though it may be *first in Speculation*, is always *last in Event*. That is to say, however it may be the End, which set the Artist first to work, it may still be an End beyond his Power to obtain, and

which, like other Contingents, may either happen, or not.^(a) Hence also it is connected by Conjunctions of a peculiar kind, such as, **THAT**, *να*, **UT**, &c.

THE Sum is, that ALL CONJUNCTIONS which connect both Sentences and their Meanings, are either COPULATIVE, or CONTINUATIVE; the Continuatives are either Conditional or Positive; and the Positives are either Causal or Collective.

AND now we come to the DISJUNCTIVE CONJUNCTIONS, a Species of Words, which bear this contradictory Name, because while they *disjoin the Sense*, they *conjoin the Sentences*.^{(b)}}

^(a) See B. I. c. 8. p. 142. See also Vol. I. Note VIII. p. 271. For the four Causes, see Vol. I. Note XVII. p. 280.

^(b) Οἱ δὲ διαζευκτικοὶ τὰ διαζευγμένα συντίθεσι, η̄ ἡ πρᾶγμα ἀπὸ πράγματος, η̄ πρόσωπον ἀπὸ προσώπου δια-

WITH respect to these we may observe, that as there is a principle of UNION diffused throughout all things, by which THIS WHOLE is kept together, and preserved from Dissipation ; so there is a Principle of DIVERSITY diffused in like manner, the Source of Distinction, of Number, and of Order.^(*)

ζευγνύντες, τὴν φράσιν ἐπισυνδέσιν. *Gazæ Gram.* L. IV. *Disjunctivæ sunt, que, quævis dictiones conjungant, sensum tamen disjunctum habent.* *Prisc.* L. XVI. p. 1029. And hence it is, that a Sentence, connected by Disjunctives, has a near resemblance to a *simple negative Truth*. For though this as to its Intellection be *disjunctive* (its end being to disjoin the Subject from the Predicate) yet as it combines Terms together into one Proposition, it is as truly *synthetical*, as any Truth, that is *affirmative*. See Chap. I. Note ^(*) p. 3.

^(*) The DIVERSITY which adorns Nature, may be said to heighten by degrees, and as it passes to different Subjects, to become more and more intense. Some things only differ, when considered as *Individuals*, but if we recur to their *Species*, immediately lose all Distinction : such for instance are *Socrates* and *Plato*. Others differ as to *Species*, but as to *Genus* are the same : such are *Man* and *Lion*. There are others again, which differ as to *Genus*, and co-

Now it is to express in some degree the Modifications of this Diversity, that DISJUNCTIVE CONJUNCTIONS seem first to have been invented.

Of these DISJUNCTIVES, some are SIMPLE, some ADVERSATIVE—*Simple*, as when we say, EITHER it is Day, OR it

incide only in those *transcendental Comprehensions* of Ens, Being, Existence, and the like: such are Quantities and Qualities, as for example an Ounce, and the Colour, White. Lastly ALL BEING whatever differs, as *Being*, from Non-being.

Farther, in all things different, however moderate their Diversity, there is an appearance of OPPOSITION with respect to each other, in as much as each thing is itself, and not any of the rest. But yet in all Subjects this Opposition is not the same. In RELATIVES, such as Greater and Less, Double and Half, Father and Son, Cause and Effect, in these it is more striking, than in ordinary Subjects, because these always shew it, by necessarily inferring each other. In CONTRARIES, such as Black and White, Even and Odd, Good and Bad, Virtuous and Vicious, in these the Opposition goes still farther, because these not only differ, but are even destructive of each other.

is *Night*—*Adversative* as when we say, *It is not Day, but it is Night*. The Difference between these is, that the simple do no more, than *merely disjoin*; the *Adversative* disjoin, with an *Opposition concomitant*: Add to this, that the *Adversative* are *definite*; the Simple, *indefinite*. Thus when we say, *The Number of Three is not an even Number, but an odd*, we not only disjoin

But the most potent *Opposition* is that of Ἀντίφασις, or **CONTRADICTION**, when we oppose *Proposition* to *Proposition*, *Truth* to *Falsehood*, asserting of any Subject, either *it is*, or *it is not*. This indeed is an *Opposition* which extends itself to all things, for every thing conceivable must needs have its *Negative*, though multitudes by nature have neither *Relatives*, nor *Contraries*.

Besides these Modes of **DIVERSITY**, there are others that deserve notice: such for instance, as the Diversity between the *Name* of a thing, and its *Definition*; between the *various Names*, which belong to the *same thing*, and the *various things*, which are denoted by the *same Name*; all which *Diversities* upon occasion become a Part of our Discourse. And so much, in short, for the Subject of **DIVERSITY**.

two opposite Attributes, but we definitely affirm one, and deny the other. But when we say, *The Number of the Stars is EITHER even OR odd*, though we assert one Attribute *to be*, and the other *not to be*, yet the Alternative notwithstanding is left indefinite. And so much for simple *Disjunctives*.^(*)

As to *Adversative Disjunctives*, it has been said already that they imply OPPO-

^(*) The simple Disjunctive *ἢ*, or *Vel*, is mostly used *indefinitely*, so as to leave an Alternative. But when it is used *definitely*, so as to leave no Alternative, it is then a perfect Disjunctive of the Subsequent from the Previous and has the same force with *ἢ* *ἢ*, or, *Et non*. It is thus *Gaza* explains that Verse of *Homēr*.

βελομ' ἐγώ λαὸν σύν εὑμεναι, ή ἀπολέσθαι.

IΛ. A.

That is to say, *I desire the people should be saved, AND NOT be destroyed*, the Conjunction *ἢ* being ἀναρρητός, or *sublative*. It must however be confess, that this Verse is otherwise explained by an Ellipsis, either of μᾶλλον, or αὐτίς, concerning which see the Commentators.

SITION. Now there can be no Opposition of the *same Attribute*, in the *same Subject*, as when we say *Nireus was beautiful*; but the Opposition must be either of the *same Attribute* in *different Subjects*, as when we say *Bratus was a Patriot* BUT *Cæsar was not*—or of *different Attributes* in the *same Subject*, as when we say, *Georgias was a Sophist, BUT not a Philosopher*—or of *different Attributes* in *different Subjects*, as when we say, *Plato was a Philosopher, BUT Hippias was a Sophist*.

THE *Conjunctions* used for all these purposes may be called ABSOLUTE ADVERSATIVES.

BUT there are *other Adversatives*, besides these; as when we say, *Nireus was more beautiful THAN Achilles*—*Virgil was AS great a Poet AS Cicero was an Orator*. The Character of these latter is, that they go farther than the former, by marking not

only *Opposition*, but that *Equality* or *Excess*, which arises among Subjects from their being *compared*. And hence it is they may be called **ADVERSATIVES OF COMPARISON**.

BESIDES the Adversatives here mentioned, there are two other Species, of which the most eminent are **UNLESS** and **ALTHO'**. For example—*Troy will be taken UNLESS the Palladium be preserved*—*Troy will be taken ALTHO' Hector defend it*. The Nature of these *Adversatives* may be thus explained. As every *Event* is naturally *allied* to its *Cause*, so by parity of reason it is *opposed* to its *Preventive*. And as every *Cause* is either *adequate*^(*) or *in-adequate* (*in-adequate*, when it endeavours, without being effectual) so in like

^(*) This Distinction has reference to *common Opinion*, and the *form of Language*, consonant thereto. In strict metaphysical truth, *No Cause, that is not adequate, is any Cause at all*.

manner is every *Preventive*. Now *adequate Preventives* are express by such Adversatives, as UNLESS—*Troy will be taken, UNLESS the Palladium be preserved*; that is *This alone is sufficient to prevent it*. The *in-adequate* are express by such Adversatives as ALTHO'—*Troy will be taken ALTHO' Hector defend it*; that is, *Hector's Defence will prove in-effectual*.

THE Names given by the old Grammarians to denote these last Adversatives, appear not sufficiently to express their Natures.^(w) They may be better perhaps called ADVERSATIVES ADEQUATE and IN-ADEQUATE.

AND thus it is that all DISJUNCTIVES, that is CONJUNCTIONS, *which conjoin Sen-*

^(w)They called them for the most part, without sufficient Distinction of their Species, *Adversativa*, or Ἐναντιωματικοί.

tences, but not their meanings, are either SIMPLE, or ADVERSATIVE; and that all ADVERSATIVES are either *Absolute* or *Comparative*; or else *Adequate* or *In-adequate*.

WE shall finish this Chapter with a few miscellany Observations.

IN the first place it may be observed, through all the Species of Disjunctives, that the *same* Disjunctive appears to have *greater* or *less* force, according as the Subjects, which it disjoins, are more or less disjoined by Nature. For example, if we say, *Every Number is even, OR odd—Every Proposition is true, OR false*—nothing seems to disjoin *more strongly* than the *Disjunctive*, because no things are in Nature more *incompatible* than the Subjects. But if we say, *That Object is a Triangle, OR Figure contained under three right lines*—the (OR) in this case hardly seems to disjoin, or indeed to do more, than *dis-*

tinctly to express the Thing, first by its Name, and then by its Definition. So if we say, *That Figure is a Sphere, or a Globe, or a Ball*—the Disjunctive in this case, tends no farther to disjoin, than as it distinguishes the several Names, which belong to the same Thing.⁽ⁿ⁾

AGAIN—the Words, *When* and *Where*, and all others of the same nature, such as, *Whence*, *Whither*, *Whenever*, *Wherever*, &c. may be properly called ADVERBIAL CONJUNCTIONS, because they participate the nature both of Adverbs and Conjunctions—*of Conjunctions*, as they conjoin Sen-

⁽ⁿ⁾ The Latins had a peculiar Particle for this occasion, which they called *Subdisjunctiva*, a *Subdisjunctive*; and that was *SIVE*. *Alexander sive Paris*; *Mars sive Mavors*. The Greek *Eit' ἢν* seems to answer the same end. Of these Particles, Scaliger thus speaks—*Et sane nomen Subdisjunctivarum recte acceptum est, neque enim tam planè disjungit, quam Disjunctivæ. Nam Disjunctivæ sunt in Contrariis—Subdisjunctivæ autem etiam in non Contrariis, sed Diversis tantum; ut, Alexander sive Paris.* De C. L. Lat. c. 170.

tences; of *Adverbs*, as they denote the Attributes either of *Time*, or of *Place*.

AGAIN—these *Adverbial Conjunctions*, and perhaps *most of the Prepositions* (contrary to the Character of *accessory Words*, which have strictly no Signification, but when associated with other words) have a kind of *obscure Signification*, when taken alone, by denoting those Attributes of Time and Place. And hence it is, that they appear in Grammar, like *Zoophytes* in Nature; a kind of ^(*) middle Beings, of amphibious character, which, by sharing the Attributes of the higher and the lower, conduce to link the Whole together.^(p)

^(*) Πολλαχοῦ γὰρ ἡ φύσις δῆλη γίνεται κατὰ μικρὸν μεταβαίνεσσα, ὥστε ἀμφισβητεῖσθαι ἐπὶ τίνων, πότερον ζῶν τὴν φυτὸν. *Themist.* p. 74. Ed. Ald. See also *Arist. de Animal.* Part. p. 93. l. 10. Ed. Syll.

^(p) It is somewhat surprising that the politest and most elegant of the *Attic Writers*, and *Plato* above all the rest,

AND so much for CONJUNCTIONS, their Genus, and their Species.

should have their works filled with Particles of all kinds, and with Conjunctions in particular; while in the modern polite works, as well of ourselves as of our neighbours, scarce such a Word as a Particle, or Conjunction is to be found. Is it, that where there is *Connection in the Meaning*, there must be *Words had to connect*; but that where the Connection is little or none, such Connectives are of little use? That Houses of Cards, without cement, may well answer their end, but not those Houses, where one would chuse to dwell? Is this the Cause? or have we attained an Elegance, to the Antients unknown?

Venimus ad summam fortunæ, &c.

CHAP. III.

*Concerning those Connectives called
Prepositions.*

PREPOSITIONS by their name express their *Place*, but not their *Character*. Their Definition will distinguish them from the former Connectives. A PREPOSITION is a *Part of Speech*, devoid itself of *Signification*, but so formed as to unite two Words that are significant, and that refuse to coalesce or unite of themselves.^(a)

^(a) The Stoic Name for a Preposition was Προθετικὸς Σύνδεσμος, *Præpositiva Conjunction*, a *Prepositive Conjunction*. Ως μὲν ὁν ἐ κατὰ τὰς ἄλλας παραθέσιες αἱ προθέσιες συνδεσμικῆς συντάξεως γίνονται παρεμφατικαὶ, λέλεκται ἡμῖν ἐξ ὅν ἐ ἀφορμὴ εὑρηται παρὰ τοῖς Στωικοῖς τῇ καλεῖσθαι αὐτὰς Προθετικὰς Συνδέσμους. Now in what manner even in other applications (besides the present) Prepositions give proof of their Conjunctive Syntax, we have mentioned already; whence too the Stoics

This connective Power (which relates to *Words* only, and not *Sentences*), will be better understood from the following Speculations.

SOME things co-alesce and unite *of themselves*; others refuse to do so *without help*, and as it were compulsion. Thus in Works of Art, the Mortar and the Stone co-alesce *of themselves*; but the Wainscot and the Wall not without Nails and Pins. In nature this is more conspicuous. For example; all Quantities, and Qualities co-alesce immediately with their Substances. Thus it is we say, *a fierce Lion, a vast Mountain*; and from *this Natural Concord of Subject and Accident*, arises *the Gram-*

took occasion to call them PREPOSITIVE CONJUNCTIONS.
Apollon. L. IV. c. 5. p. 313. Yet is this in fact rather a descriptive *Sketch*, than a complete *Definition*, since there are other Conjunctions, which are Prepositive as well as these. See *Gaz.* L. IV. de *Præposit.* *Prisc.* L. XIV. p. 983.

matical Concord of Substantive and Adjective. In like manner Actions co-alesce with their Agents, and Passions with their Patients. Thus it is we say, *Alexander conquers*; *Darius is conquered*. Nay, as every Energy is a kind of Medium between its Agent and Patient, the whole three, *Agent*, *Energy*, and *Patient*, co-alesce with the same facility; as when we say, *Alexander conquers Darius*. And hence, that is from these Modes of natural Co-alescence, arises the Grammatical Regimen of the Verb by its Nominative, and of the Accusative by its Verb. Farther than this, Attributives themselves may be most of them characterized; as when we say of such Attributives as *ran*, *beautiful*, *learned*, he *ran swiftly*, she was *very beautiful*, he was *moderately learned*, &c. And hence the Co-alescence of the Adverb with Verbs, Participles, and Adjectives.

THE general Conclusion appears to be

this. “THOSE PARTS OF SPEECH UNITE
“OF THEMSELVES IN GRAMMAR, WHOSE
“ORIGINAL ARCHETYPES UNITE OF
“THEMSELVES IN NATURE.” To which
we may add, as following from what has
been said, that *the great Objects of Natural
Union are Substance and Attribute.*
Now though *Substances* naturally co-incide
with their *Attributes*, yet they absolutely
refuse doing so, *one with another.*^(v) And
hence those known Maxims in Physics,
that *Body is impenetrable*; that *two Bodies*
cannot possess the same place; that *the same
Attribute cannot belong to different Sub-
stances, &c.*

FROM these Principles it follows, that
when we form a Sentence, the *Substantive*

^(v) *Causa, propter quam duo Substantiva non ponuntur
sine copula, e Philosophia petenda est: neque enim duo sub-
stantialiter unum esse potest, sicut Substantia et Accidens;
itaque non dicas, CÆSAR, CATO PUGNAT.* Scal. de Caus.
Ling. Lat. c. 177.

without difficulty co-incides with the *Verb*, from the natural Co-incidence of *Substance* and *Energy*—THE SUN WARMETH. So likewise the *Energy* with the *Subject*, on which it operates—WARMETH THE EARTH. So likewise both *Substance* and *Energy* with their proper *Attributes*.—THE SPLENDID SUN,—GENIALLY WARMETH—THE FERTILE EARTH. But suppose we were desirous to add other Substantives, as for instance, AIR or BEAMS. How would these co-incide, or under what Character could they be introduced? Not as *Nominatives* or *Accusatives*, for both those places are already filled; the Nominative by the Substance, SUN; the Accusative by the Substance, EARTH. Not as Attributes to these last, or to any other thing; for *Attributes by nature they neither are, nor can be made*. Here then we perceive the Rise and Use of PREPOSITIONS. By these we connect those Substantives to Sentences, which at the time are unable to coalesce

of themselves. Let us assume for instance a pair of these Connectives, THRO' and WITH, and mark their Effect upon the Substances here mentioned. *The splendid Sun with his Beams genially warmeth thro' the air, the fertile Earth.* The Sentence, as before, remains *intire and one*; the *Substantives* required are both *introduced*; and not a Word, which was there before, is detrued from its proper place.

IT must here be observed that most, if not all Prepositions seem originally formed to denote the *Relations of Place.*^(e) The reason is, this is that grand *Relation*, which *Bodies* or *natural Substances* maintain at all times one to another, whether they are

^(e) *Omne corpus aut movetur aut quiescit: quare opus fuit aliquid notum, quæ TO ΠΟΥ significaret, sive esset inter duo extrema, inter quæ motus fit, sive esset in altero extre- morum, in quibus fit quies. Hinc elicimus Præpositionis essentialem definitionem.* Scal. de Caus. Ling. Lat. c. 152.

contiguous or remote, whether in motion, or at rest.

IT may be said indeed that *in the Continuity of Place* they form this UNIVERSE or VISIBLE WHOLE, and are made as much ONE by that general Comprehension as is consistent with their several Natures, and specific Distinctions. Thus it is we have Prepositions to denote the *contiguous Relation* of Body, as when we say, *Caius walked WITH a Staff; the Statue stood UPON a Pedestal; the River ran OVER a Sand;* others for the *detached Relation*, as when we say, *He is going to Italy; the Sun is risen ABOVE the Hills; these Figs came from Turkey.* So as to Motion and Rest, only with this difference, that here the Preposition varies its character with the Verb. Thus if we say, *that Lamp hangs FROM the Ceiling,* the Preposition, FROM, assumes a Character of Quiescence. But if we say, *that Lamp is falling FROM*

the Ceiling, the Preposition in such case assumes a Character of *Motion*. So in *Milton*,

—*To support uneasie Steps*
Over the burning Marle—Par. L. I.

Here **OVER** denotes *Motion*.

Again—

—He—with looks of cordial Love
Hung over her enamour'd— Par. L. IV.

Here **OVER** denotes *Rest*.

But though the original use of Prepositions was to denote the *Relations of Place* they could not be confined to this Office only. They by degrees extended themselves to Subjects *incorporeal*, and came to denote Relations, as well *intellectual* as *local*. Thus, because in Place he, who is *above*, has commonly the advantage over him, who is *below*, hence we transfer **OVER** and **UNDER** to *Dominion* and *Obedience*; of a king we say, *he ruled over his People*;

of a common Soldier, *he served under such a General.* So too we say, *with Thought; without Attention; thinking over a Subject; under Anxiety; from Fear; out of Love; through Jealousy, &c.* All which instances, with many others of like kind, shew that the *first Words* of Men, like their *first Ideas*, had an immediate reference to *sensible Objects*, and that in after days, when they began to discern with their *Intellect*, they took those Words, which they found *already made*, and transferred them by metaphor to *intellectual Conceptions*. There is indeed no Method to express new Ideas, but either this of *Metaphor*, or that of *Coining new Words*, both which have been practised by Philosophers and wise Men, according to the nature, and exigence of the occasion.^(d)

^(d) Among the Words new coined we may ascribe to *Anaxagoras* Ὀμοιομέρεια; to *Plato* Ποιότης; to *Cicero*, *Qualitas*; to *Aristotle* Ἐντελέχεια; to the *Stoicks*, Οὐρίς, κεράτης and many others.—Among the Words transferred by Me-

IN the foregoing use of Prepositions, we have seen how they are applied κατά

taphor from common to special Meanings, to the *Platonics* we may ascribe Ἰδέα ; to the *Pythagoreans* and *Peripatetics*, Κατηγορία, and Κατηγορεῖν ; to the *Stoics*, Κατάληψις, ὑπόληψις, καθίκον ; to the *Pyrrhonists*, Ἐξεστι, ἐνδέχεται, ἐπέχω, &c.

And here I cannot but observe, that he who pretends to discuss the Sentiments of any one of these Philosophers or even to cite and translate him (except in trite and obvious Sentences) without accurately knowing the Greek Tongue in general ; the nice differences of many Words apparently synonymous ; the peculiar Stile of the author whom he presumes to handle ; the new coined Words, and new Significations given to old Words, used by such Author, and his Sect ; the whole Philosophy of such Sect, together with the Connections and Dependencies of its several Parts, whether Logical, Ethical, or Physical ;—He, I say, that, without this previous preparation, attempts what I have said, will shoot in the dark ; will be liable to perpetual blunders : will explain, and praise, and censure merely by chance ; and though he may possibly to Fools appear as a wise Man, will certainly among the wise ever pass for a Fool. Such a Man's Intellect comprehends antient Philosophy, as his eye comprehends a distant Prospect. He may see perhaps enough, to know Mountains from Plains, and Seas from Woods ; but for an accurate discernment of particulars, and their character, this without farther helps, it is impossible he should attain.

παράθεσην, by way of Juxta-position, that is to say, where they are prefixt to a Word, without becoming a Part of it. But they may be used also *κατὰ σύνθεσην*, by way of Composition, that is, they may be prefixt to a Word, so as to become a real Part of it.^(o) Thus in Greek we have ‘Επίστασαι, in Latin, *Intelligere*, in English, to *Understand*. So also, to *foretel*, to *overact*; to *undervalue*, to *outgo*, &c. and in Greek and Latin, other instances innumerable. In this case, the Prepositions commonly transfuse something of their own meaning into the Word, with which they are compounded; and this imparted Meaning in most instances will be found ultimately resolvable into some of the Relations of PLACE,^(p) as used either in its *proper* or *metaphorical* acceptation.

^(o) See *Gaz. Gram.* L. IV. Cap. de *Prépositione*.

^(p) For example, let us suppose some given Space. E

LASTLY, there are times, when Prepositions totally lose their connective Nature,

and F signify *out of* that Space; P_{ER}, *through it*, from begining to end; IN, *within it*; SUB, *under it*. Hence then E and P_{ER} in composition *augment*; Enormis, something not simply big, but big in Excess; something got *out of the rule*, and *beyond the measure*; Dico, to speak; Edico, to speak out; whence *Edictum*, an *Edict*, something so effectually spoken, as all are supposed to hear, and all to obey. So Terence,

Dico, Edico vobis—Eun. V. 20.

which (as *Donatus* tells us in his Comment) is an Αὐξησις. *Fari*, to speak; *Effari*, to speak out—hence *Effatum*, an *Axiom*, or self-evident Proposition, something addressed as it were to all men, and calling for universal Assent. Cic. Acad. II. 29. *Permagnus, Perutilis*, great throughout, useful through every part.

On the contrary, IN and SUB diminish and lessen. *Injustus, Iniquus, unjust, inequitable*, that lies *within* Justice and Equity, that reaches not so far, that falls short of them; *Subniger, blackish; Subrubicundus, reddish*; tending to black, and tending to red, but yet *under* the standard, and *below* perfection.

Emo originally signified *to take away*; hence it came to signify *to buy*, because he who buys, *takes away* his purchase. INTER, *Between*, implies *Discontinuance*,

being converted into Adverbs, and used in Syntax accordingly. Thus *Homer*,

—Γέλασσε δὲ πᾶσα περὶ χθῶν.

—And Earth smil'd all around.

I&. T. 362.

But of this we have spoken in a preceding Chapter.^(*) One thing we must however observe, before we finish this Chapter, which is, that whatever we may be told of CASES in modern Languages, there are in fact no such things ; but their force and power is express by two Methods, either

for in things continuous there can nothing lie between. From these two comes, *Interimo*, to kill, that is to say, to take a Man away in the midst of Life, by making a Discontinuance of his vital Energy. So also *Perimo*, to kill a Man, that is to say, to take him away thoroughly : for indeed what more thorough taking away can well be supposed ? The Greek Verb, Ἀναρτίν, and the English Verb, To take off, seem both to carry the same allusion. And thus it is, that Prepositions become Parts of other Words.

^(*) See before, p. 205.

by *Situation*, or by *Prepositions*; the *Nominate and Accusative Cases* by *Situation*; the rest by *Prepositions*. But this we shall make the subject of a Chapter by itself, concluding here our Inquiry concerning *Prepositions*.

CHAP. IV.

Concerning Cases.

AS CASES, or at least their various Powers, depend on the knowledge partly of *Nouns*, partly of *Verbs*, and partly of *Prepositions*; they have been reserved, till those Parts of Speech had been examined and discussed, and are for that reason made the Subject of so late a Chapter as the present.

THERE are no CASES, in the modern Languages, except a few among the *primitive Pronouns*, such as I, and ME; JE, and MOY; and the *English Genitive*, formed by the addition of s, as when from *Lion*, we form *Lion's*; from *Ship*, *Ship's*. From this defect, however, we may be

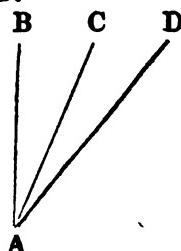
enabled to discover in some instances *what a Case is*, the *Periphrasis*, which supplies its place, being *the Case* (as it were) *unfolded*. Thus *Equi* is analyzed into *Du Cheval*, *Of the Horse*; *Equo* into *Au Cheval*, *To the Horse*. And hence we see that the **GENITIVE** and **DATIVE CASES** imply the joint Power of a *Noun* and a *Preposition*, the Genitive's Preposition being *A*, *De*, or *Ex*, the Dative's Preposition being *Ad*, or *Versus*.

WE have not this assistance as to the **ACCUSATIVE**, which in modern Languages (a few instances excepted) is only known from its position, that is to say, by being subsequent to its Verb, in the collocation of the words.

THE **VOCATIVE** we pass over from its little use, being not only unknown to the modern Languages, but often in the ancient being supplied by the *Nominative*.

THE ABLATIVE likewise was used by the *Romans* only; a Case they seem to have adopted *to associate with their Prepositions*, as they had deprived their *Genitive* and *Dative* of that privilege; a Case certainly not necessary, because the *Greeks* do as well without it, and because with the *Romans* themselves it is frequently undistinguished.

THERE remains the NOMINATIVE, which whether it were a Case or no, was much disputed by the Antients. The *Peripatetics* held it to be no *Case*, and likened the Noun, in this its *primary* and *original Form*, to a perpendicular Line, such, for example, as the line AB.



The Variations from the Nominative, they considered, as if AB were to fall from its

perpendicular, as for example, to AC, or AD. Hence then they only called these Variations, ΠΤΩΣΕΙΣ, CASES, CASES, or FALLINGS. The Stoicks on the contrary, and the Grammarians with them, made the *Nominative* a CASE also. Words they considered (as it were) to fall from the *Mind* or *Discursive Faculty*. Now when a Noun fell thence *in its primary Form*, they then called it ΠΤΩΣΙΣ ΟΡΘΗ, CASES RECTUS, AN ERECT, OR UPRIGHT CASE or FALLING, such as AB, and by this name they distinguish the *Nominative*. When it fell from the *Mind* under any of its variations, as for example in the form of a *Genitive*, a *Dative*, or the like, such variations they called ΠΤΩΣΕΙΣ ΠΛΑΓΙΑΙ, CASES OBLIQUE CASES, or SIDE-LONG FALLINGS (such as AC, or AD) in opposition to the other (that is AB) which was erect and perpendicular.^(a) Hence

^(a) See Ammon. in Libr. de Interpr. p. 35.

too Grammarians called the Method of enumerating the various Cases of a Noun, ΚΛΙΣΙΣ, DECLINATIO, a DECLEMPTION, it being a sort of *progressive Descent from the Noun's upright Form thro' its various declining Forms*, that is, a Descent from AB, to AC, AD, &c.

Of these CASES we shall treat but of four, that is to say, the NOMINATIVE, the ACCUSATIVE, the GENITIVE and the DATIVE.

IT has been said already in the preceding Chapter, that the great Objects of natural Union are SUBSTANCE and ATTRIBUTE. Now from this *Natural Concord* arises the *Logical Concord* of SUBJECT and PREDICATE, and the *Grammatical Concord of Substantive and Attributive.*^(*) These CONCORDS in SPEECH

^(*) See before p. 264.

produce PROPOSITIONS and SENTENCES, as that previous CONCORD in NATURE produces NATURAL BEINGS. This being admitted, we proceed by observing, that when a Sentence is regular and orderly, *Nature's Substance, the Logician's Subject, and the Grammatician's Substantive* are all denoted by that Case, which we call the NOMINATIVE. For example, CÆSAR pugnat, Æs fingitur, Domus ædificatur. We may remark too by the way, that *the Character of this Nominative* may be learnt from its *Attributive*. The Action implied in *pugnat*, shews its Nominative CÆSAR to be an Active efficient Cause; the Passion implied in *fingitur*, shews its Nominative Æs to be a Passive Subject, as does the Passion in *ædificatur* prove Domus to be an Effect.

As therefore every Attribute would as far as possible conform itself to its Substantive, so for this reason, when it has

Cases, it imitates its Substantive, and appears as a *Nominative* also. So we find it in such instances as—**CICERO est ELOQUENS**; **VITIUM est TURPE**; **HOMO est ANIMAL**, &c. When it has no Cases (as happens with Verbs) it is forced to content itself with such assimilations as it has, those of Number and Person;* as when we say, **CICERO LOQUITUR**; **NOS LOQUIMUR**; **HOMINES LOQUUNTUR**.

FROM what has been said, we may make the following observations—that as there can be *no Sentence without a Substantive*, so that Substantive, if the Sentence be *regular*, is always denoted by a *Nominative*—that on this occasion *all the Attributives, that have Cases*, appear as *Nominatives* also—that there may be a regular and perfect Sentence *without any of the*

* What sort of Number and Person Verbs have, see before, p. 170. 171.

other Cases, but that without one Nominative at least, this is utterly impossible. Hence therefore we form its Character and Description—THE NOMINATIVE is *that Case, without which there can be no regular^(c) and perfect Sentence.* We are now to search after another Case.

WHEN the *Attributive* in any Sentence is some *Verb denoting Action*, we may be assured *the principal Substantive* is some *active efficient Cause*. So we may call *Achilles* and *Lysippus* in such Sentences as *Achilles vulneravit, Lysippus fecit.* But though this be evident and clearly understood, the Mind is still *in suspence*, and finds its conception *incomplete*. ACTION, it well knows, not only requires some *Agent*, but

^(c) We have added *regular* as well as *perfect*, because there may be *irregular* Sentences, which may be *perfect* without a *Nominative*. Of this kind are all Sentences, made out of those Verbs, called by the Stoics Παρασυμβάματα or Παρακατηγορήματα, such as Σωκράτει μετάμελει, *Socratem pœnitet*, &c. See before, p. 180.

it must have a *Subject* also to work on, and it must produce some *Effect*. It is then to denote one of these (that is, the *Subject* or the *Effect*) that the Authors of Language have destined THE ACCUSATIVE. *Achilles vulneravit HECTOREM*—here the Accusative denotes the Subject. *Lysippus fecit STATUAS*—here the Accusative denotes the Effect. By these additional Explanations the Mind becomes satisfied, and the Sentences acquire a Perfection, which before they wanted. In whatever other manner, whether figuratively, or with Prepositions, this Case may have been used, its first destination seems to have been that here mentioned, and hence therefore we shall form its Character and Description—THE ACCUSATIVE *is that Case, which to an efficient Nominative and a Verb of Action, subjoins either the Effect or the passive Subject.* We have still left the Genitive and the Dative, which we investigate as follows.

IT has been said in the preceding Chapter,^(d) that when the Places of the *Nominative* and the *Accusative* are filled by proper Substantives, other Substantives are annexed by the help of *Prepositions*. Now, though this be so far true in the modern Languages; that (a very few instances excepted) they know no other method; yet is not the rule of equal latitude with respect to the *Latin* or *Greek*, and that from reasons which we are about to offer.

AMONG the various Relations of Substantives denoted by Prepositions, there appear to be two principal ones; and these are, the *Term* or *Point*, which something commences *FROM*, and the *Term* or *Point*, which something tends to. These Relations the *Greeks* and *Latins* thought of so great importance, as to distinguish them,

^(d) See before, p. 265.

when they occurred, *by peculiar Terminations of their own*, which express their force, *without the help of a Preposition*. Now it is here we behold the Rise of the antient Genitive and Dative, the GENITIVE being formed to express all Relations commencing FROM itself; THE DATIVE, all Relations tending to itself. Of this there can be no stronger proof, than the Analysis of these Cases in the modern Languages, which we have mentioned already.⁴⁰⁾

IT is on these Principles that they say in Greek—Δεομαι ΣΟΥ, δίδωμι ΣΟΙ, Of thee I ask, To thee I give. The reason is, in requests the person requested is one whom something is expected from; in donations, the person presented, is one whom something passes to. So again—

⁴⁰⁾ See before, p. 275, 276.

[“]Πεποίηται λίθος, it is made of Stone. Stone was the passive Subject, and thus it appears in the *Genitive*, as being the *Term from, or out of which*. Even in *Latin*, where the Syntax is more formal and strict, we read—

Implentur veteris Bacchi, pinguisque ferinae.

Virg.

The old Wine and Venison were the funds or stores, *of* or *from* which they were filled. Upon the same principles, Πίνω τε ὑδατος, is a Phrase in *Greek*; and, *Je bois de l'eau*, a Phrase in *French*, as much as to say, *I take some or a certain part, FROM or OUT or a certain whole.*

WHEN we meet in Language such Genitives as *the Son of a Father*; *the Father of a Son*; *the Picture of a Painter*; *the*

⁽¹⁾ Χρυσοῦ πεποιημένος, ἡ ἐλέφαντος, *made of Gold and Ivory*. So says *Pausanias* of the *Olympian Jupiter*, L. V. p. 400. See also *Hom. Iliad*, Σ. 574.

Painter of a Picture, &c. these are all RELATIVES, and therefore each of them reciprocally a *Term* or *Point* to the other, FROM OR OUT OF which it derives its *Essence*, or at least its *Intellection*.^(e)

THE *Dative*, as it implies *Tendency to*, is employed among its other uses to denote the FINAL CAUSE, that being the Cause to which all Events, not fortuitous, may be said to tend. It is thus used in the following instances, among innumerable others.

—TIBI suaveis dædala tellus

Submittit flores—

Lucret.

^(e) All Relatives are said to reciprocate, or mutually infer each other, and therefore they are often express by this Case, that is to say, the Genitive. Thus Aristotle, Πάντα δὲ τὰ πρός τι πρός ἀντιερέφοντα λέγεται, οἷον δὲ δᾶλος δεσπότης δᾶλος, καὶ δὲ δεσπότης δᾶλος δεσπότης λέγεται εἶναι, καὶ τὸ διπλάσιον ἡμίσεος διπλάσιον, καὶ τὸ ἡμιον διπλάσιον ἡμιον. *Omnia vero, quae sunt ad aliquid, referuntur ad ea, quae reciprocantur.* Ut seruos dicitur domini servus; et dominus, servi dominus; necnon duplum, dimidii duplum; et dimidium, dupli dimidium. Categor. C. VII.

—*TIBI brachia contrahit ardens*

Scorpius—

Virg. G. I.

TIBI serviat ultima Thule. Ibid.

AND so much for CASES, their Origin and Use; a sort of Forms, or Terminations, which we could not well pass over, from their great importance ⁽ⁿ⁾ both in the Greek and Latin Tongues: but which, however, not being among the Essentials of Language, and therefore not to be found in many particular Languages, can be hardly said to fall within the limits of our Inquiry.

⁽ⁿ⁾ *Annon et illud observatione dignum (licet nobis modernis spiritibus non nihil redundat) antiquas Linguas plenas declinationum, casuum, conjugationum, et similium fuisse; modernas, his ferè destitutas, plurima per præpositiones et verba auxiliaria segniter expedire?* Sanè facile quis conjiciat (*utcunque nobis ipsi placeamus*) ingenia priorum seculorum nostris fuisse multo acutiora et subtiliora.
Bacon. de Augm. Sient. VI. 1.

CHAP. V.

Concerning Interjections—Recapitulation—Conclusion.

BESIDES the Parts of Speech before mentioned, there remains THE INTERJECTION. Of this Kind among the *Greeks* are "Ω, Φεῦ, Αἴ, &c. among the *Latins*, *Ah!* *Heu!* *Hei!* &c. among the *English*, *Ah!* *Alas!* *Fie!* &c. These the *Greeks* have ranged among their *Adverbs*; improperly, if we consider the Adverbial Nature, which always co-incides with some Verb, as its Principal, and to which it always serves in the character of an Attributive. Now *INTERJECTIONS co-incide with no Part of Speech, but are either uttered alone, or else thrown into a Sentence, without altering its Form, either in Syntax or Signification.* The *Latins* seem therefore to have done better

in † separating them by themselves, and giving them a name by way of distinction from the rest.

SHOULD it be ask'd, if not Adverbs, what then are they? It may be answered not so properly Parts of Speech, as adventitious Sounds; certain Voices of NATURE, rather than Voices of Art, expressing those Passions and natural Emotions, which spontaneously arise in the human Soul, upon the View or Narrative of interesting Events.⁽ⁿ⁾

† Vid. Servium in *Aeneid.*, XII. v. 486.

⁽ⁿ⁾ INTERJECTIONES a Græcis ad Adverbia referuntur, atque eos sequuntur etiam Boethius. Et recte quidem de his, quando casum regunt. Sed quando orationi solum intenduntur, ut nota affectus, velut suspirii aut metus, vis videntur ad classem aliquam pertinere, ut quæ NATURALES sint nota; non, aliorum vocum instar, ex insidioso significant. Voss. de Anal. L. I. c. 1. INTERJECTIO est Vox affectum mentis significans, ac citra verbi opem sententiam complens. Ibid. c. 3. Restat classem extrema, INTERJECTIONE. Hujus appellatio non similiter se habet

“ AND thus we have found that ALL
 “ WORDS ARE EITHER SIGNIFICANT BY
 “ THEMSELVES, OR ONLY SIGNIFICANT
 “ WHEN ASSOCIATED—that those signi-

de Conjunctionis Nam cum hæc dicatur *Conjunctio*, quia *conjugat*; *Interjectio* tamen, non quia *interjacet*, sed quia *interjicitur*, *nomen accepit*. Nec tamen de sola ejus est, ut *interjiciatur*; cum per se compleat sententiam, nec raro ab eis *incipiat oratio*. Ibid. L. IV. c. 28. *INTERJECTIONEM* non esse partem *Orationis* sic ostendo: Quod *naturale* est, idem est apud omnes: Sed *gemitus* et *signa lætizia* idem sunt apud omnes: Sunt igitur *naturales*. Si vero *naturales*, non sunt partes *Orationis*. Nam ea partes, secundum *Aristotalem*, ex *instituto*, non *naturæ*, debent constare. *Interjectionem* *Græci Adverbii* adnumerant; sed falso. *Nam neque*, &c. Sanct. Miner. L. I. c. 2. *INTERJECTIONEM* *Grati* inter *Adverbia* ponunt, quoniam hæc quoque vel *adjungitur verbis*, vel *verba ei subaudiuntur*. Ut si dicam—Pape! quid video?—vel per se—Pape!—etiamsi non addatur, Miror; *habet in se ipsius verbi significationem*. Quæ res maxime fecit *Romanorum artium Scriptores* separatim hanc partem ab *Adverbii* accipere; quia videtur affectum habere in sese *Verbi*, et plenam motus animi significationem, etiamsi non addatur *Verbum*, demonstrare. *Interjectio* tamen non solum illa, quæ dicunt *Græci σχετλιασμὸν*, significat; sed etiam voces, quæ cujuscunque *passionis animi pulsu* per *exclamationem* *interjiciuntur*. Prisc. L. XV.

“*ficant by themselves denote either SUB-
STANCES or ATTRIBUTES, and are called
for that reason SUBSTANTIVES and AT-
TRIBUTIVES—that the Substantives are
either NOUNS or PRONOUNS—that the
ATTRIBUTIVES are either PRIMARY or
SECONDARY—that the Primary Attri-
butives are either VERBS, PARTICIPLES,
or ADJECTIVES; the Secondary, Ad-
VERBS—Again, that the Parts of Speech,
only significant when associated, are either
DEFINITIVES or CONNECTIVES—that
the Definitives are either ARTICULAR,
or PRONOMINAL—and that the Connec-
tives are either PREPOSITIONS or CON-
JUNCTIONS.”*

AND thus have we resolved LANGUAGE,
AS A WHOLE INTO ITS CONSTITUENT
PARTS, which was the first thing, that we
proposed, in the course of this Inquiry.⁽⁴⁾

⁽⁴⁾ See before, p. 7.

BUT now, as we conclude, methinks I hear some objector, demanding with an air of pleasantry, and ridicule—“*Is there no speaking then without all this trouble?*” “*Do we not talk, every one of us, as well unlearned as learned; as well poor Peasants, as profound Philosophers?*” We may answer by interrogating on our part—Do not those same poor Peasants use the Lever and the Wedge, and many other Instruments, with much habitual readiness? And yet have they any conception of those Geometrical Principles, from which those Machines derive their Efficacy and Force? And is the Ignorance of these Peasants a reason for others to remain ignorant; or to render the Subject a less becoming Inquiry? Think of Animals, and Vegetables, that occur every day—of Time, of Place, and of Motion—of Light, of Colours, and of Gravitation—of our very Senses and Intellect, by which we perceive every thing else—

THAT they are, we all know, and are perfectly satisfied—WHAT they are, is a Subject of much obscurity and doubt. Were we to reject this last Question, because we are certain of the first, we should banish all Philosophy at once out of the world.^ω

But a graver Objector now accosts us.
 “What (says he) is the UTILITY?
 “Whence the Profit, where the Gain?”
 Every Science whatever (we may answer)
 has its Use. Arithmetic is excellent for
 the gauging of Liquors; Geometry, for

“Αλλ’ έτι πολλὰ τῶν ὄντων, ἀ τὴν μὲν ὑπαρξίᾳ ἔχει
 γυνωμάτατην, ἀγνωστάτην δὲ τὴν ὁσίαν· ὥσπερ ἡτε
 κίνησις, ηδὸν τόπος, ἔτι δὲ μᾶλλον ὁ χρόνος. Ἐκάστη γὰρ
 τέτοια τὸ μὲν εἶναι γνώριμον ηδὸν αὐτοφέλεκτον· τίς δὲ ποτέ
 ἔτιν αὐτῶν οὐδεῖται, τῶν χαλεπωτάτων δραθήναι. Ἔτι δὲ
 δῆτα τί τῶν τοιέτων ηδὸν ψυχή· τὸ μὲν γάρ εἶναι τι τὴν
 ψυχὴν, γυνωμάτατον ηδὸν φανερώτατον· τέλος δὲ ποτέ ἔτιν, οὐ
 μάθιμον κατερμαθεῖν. Ἀλεξανδ. Ἀφροδ. Περὶ ψυχῆς, Β'. p.
 142.

the measuring of Estates; Astronomy, for the making of Almanacks; and Grammar, perhaps, for the drawing of Bonds and Conveyances.

THUS much to the *Sordid*—If the *Liberal* ask for something better than this, we may answer and assure them from the best authorities, that every Exercise of the Mind upon Theorems of Science, like generous and manly Exercise of the Body, tends to call forth and strengthen Nature's original Vigour. Be the Subject itself immediately lucrative or not, the Nerves of Reason are braced by the mere Employ, and we become abler Actors in the Drama of Life, whether our Part be of the busier, or of the sedater kind.

PERHAPS too there is a Pleasure even in Science itself, distinct from any End, to which it may be farther conducive. Are

not Health and Strength of *Body* desirable for their own sakes, tho' we happen not to be fated either for Porters or Draymen? And have not Health and Strength of *Mind* their intrinsic Worth also, tho' not condemned to the low drudgery of sordid Emolument? Why should there not be *a Good* (could we have the Grace to recognize it) *in the mere Energy of our Intellect*, as much as in Energies of lower degree? The Sportsman believes there is Good in his Chace; the Man of Gaiety, in his Intrigue; even the Glutton, in his Meal. We may justly ask of these, *why they pursue such things*; but if they answer, *they pursue them, because they are Good*, it would be folly to ask them farther, *WHY they PURSUE what is Good*. It might well in such case be replied on their behalf (how strange soever it may at first appear) *that if there was not something Good, which was in no respect USEFUL, even things useful themselves could not*

possibly have existence. For this is in fact no more than to assert, that some things are ENDS, some things are MEANS, and that if there were NO ENDS, there could be of course NO MEANS.

IT should seem then the Grand Question was, WHAT IS GOOD—that is to say, *what is that which is desirable, not for something else, but for itself;* for whether it be the Chace, or the Intrigue, or the Meal, may be fairly questioned, since Men in each instance are far from being agreed.

IN the mean time it is plain from daily experience, there are infinite Pleasures, Amusements, and Diversions, some for Summer, others for Winter; some for Country, others for Town; some easy, indolent, and soft; others boisterous, active, and rough; a multitude diversified to every taste, and which for the time are

enjoyed as **P E R F E C T G O O D**, without a thought of any End, that may be farther obtained. Some Objects of this kind are at times sought by all Men, excepting alone that contemptible Tribe, who, from a love to the Means of life wholly forgetting its End, are truly for that reason called *Misers*, or Miserable.

I F there be supposed then a Pleasure, a Satisfaction, a Good, a Something valuable for itself without view to any thing farther, in so many Objects of the *sub-ordinate* kind ; shall we not allow the same praise to the *sublimest* of all Objects ? Shall the INTELLIGCT alone feel no pleasures in its Energy, when we allow them to the grossest Energies of Appetite, and Sense ? Or if the Reality of all Pleasures and Goods were to be controverted, may not the *Intellectual* Sort be defended, as rationally as any of them ? Whatever may be urged in

behalf of the rest (for we are not now arraigning them) we may safely affirm of INTELLECTUAL Good, that it is “the “Good of that Part, which is most ex-“cellent within us; that it is a good ac-“commodated to all Places and Times; “which neither depends on the will of “others nor on the affluence of external “Fortune; that it is a Good, which de-“cays not with decaying Appetites, but “often rises in vigour, when those are no “more.”^(d)

THERE is a Difference, we must own, between this *Intellectual* Virtue, and *Moral* Virtue. MORAL VIRTUE, from its Employment, may be called more HUMAN, as it tempers our Appetites to the purposes of human Life. But INTELLEC-

^(d) See Vol. I. p. 119, 120, &c.

PERPETUAL VIRTUE may be surely called more DIVINE, if we consider the Nature and Sublimity of its End.

INDEED for *Moral Virtue*, as it is almost wholly conversant about Appetites, and Affections, either to reduce the natural ones to a proper Mean, or totally to expel the unnatural and vicious, it would be impious to suppose THE DEITY to have occasion for such an Habit, or that any work of this kind should call for his attention. Yet GOD IS, and LIVES. So we are assured from Scripture itself. What then may we suppose the DIVINE LIFE to be? Not a Life of Sleep, as Fables tell us of *Endymion*. If we may be allowed then to conjecture with a becoming reverence, what more likely, than A PERPETUAL ENERGY OF THE PUREST INTELLECT ABOUT THE FIRST, ALL-COMPREHENSIVE OBJECTS OF INTELLECTION, WHICH OBJECTS ARE

NO OTHER THAN THAT INTELLECT ITSELF? For in pure INTELLECTION it holds the reverse of all Sensation, that THE PERCEIVER AND THING PERCEIVED are ALWAYS ONE AND THE SAME.^(*)

IT was Speculation of this kind concerning THE DIVINE NATURE, which in-

(*) Εἰ δὲ ἔντιμος εὐ ἔχει, ως ἡμεῖς ποτὲ, ὁ Θεός αὐτός, θαυμαστόν εἰ δὲ μᾶλλον, ἔτε θαυμασιώτερον ἔχει δὲ ὡδε, η ζωὴ δὲ γε ὑπάρχει· η γὰρ Νῷ ἐνέργεια, ζωὴ. Ἐκεῖνος δὲ, η ἐνέργεια ἐνέργεια δὲ η καθ' αὐτὴν, ἐκείνει ζωὴ ἀρτη η ἀτίδιος. Φαμὲν δὲ τὸν Θεὸν εἶναι ζῶον ἀτίδιον, ἄριστον ὥστε ζωὴ η αἰών συνεχῆς η ἀτίδιος ὑπάρχει τῷ Θεῷ· ΤΟΥΤΟ γὰρ Ο ΘΕΟΣ· Τῶν μετὰ τὰ φυτά Λ'. Ζ'. It is remarkable in Scripture that GOD is peculiarly characterized as A LIVING GOD, in opposition to all false and imaginary Deities, of whom some had no pretensions to Life at all; others to none higher than that of Vegetables or Brutes; and the best were nothing better than illustrious Men, whose existence was circumscribed by the short period of Humanity.

duced one of the wisest among the Anti-
 ents to believe—"That the Man, who
 " could live in the pure enjoyment of his
 " Mind, and who properly cultivated that
 " divine Principle, was *happiest in himself*,
 " and *most beloved by the Gods*. For if the
 " Gods had any regard to what past among
 " Men (as it appeared they had) it was
 " probable they should rejoice in *that*
 " *which was most excellent*, and by nature
 " *the most nearly allied to themselves*; and,
 " as this was MIND, that they should
 " requite the Man, who most loved and
 " honoured *This*, both from his regard to
 " *that which was dear to themselves*, and

To the passage above quoted, may be added another, which immediately precedes it. Αὐτὸν δὲ νοεῖ ὁ νῦς καὶ περιληφθεὶς τὸν οὐτρέαν νοητὸς γάρ γίνεται, Σιγγάνων ἐξ νοῶν οὐτε ΤΑΥΤΟΝ ΝΟΥΣ ΚΑΙ ΝΟΗΤΟΝ.

“ from his acting a Part, which was laudable and right.”⁶

AND thus in all Science there is something *valuable for itself*, because it contains within it something which is *divine*.

⁶ Οὐ Ήθικός Νικομάχος τὸ Κ'. κεφ. 4.

END OF THE SECOND BOOK.



H E R M E S
OR
A PHILOSOPHICAL INQUIRY
CONCERNING
UNIVERSAL GRAMMAR.

BOOK III.

CHAP. I.

*Introduction—Division of the Subject into
its principal Parts.*

SOME things the MIND performs thro' the BODY; as for example the various Works and Energies of Art.—Others it performs *without such Medium*; as for example, when it thinks, and reasons, and concludes. Now tho' the Mind, in either case, may be called the Principle or Source, yet are these last more properly *its own* peculiar Acts, as being immediately

Treatise, to seek whether *these*, or *any thing analogous to them*, may be found in SPEECH or LANGUAGE.^(c) This therefore we shall attempt after the following method.

^(c) See before, p. 27. MATTER and FORM (in Greek ΥΛΗ and ΕΙΔΟΣ) were Terms of great import in the days of antient Philosophy, when things were scrutinized rather at their beginning than at their End. They have been but little regarded by modern Philosophy, which almost wholly employs itself about the last order of Substance, that is to say, the *tangible, corporeal* or *concrete*, and which acknowledges no separations even in this, but those made by mathematical Instruments, or Chemical Process.

The original meaning of the Word ΥΛΗ, was SYLVA, a Wood. Thus Homer,

—Τρέμε δὲ φρεα μακρὰ ἡ ΥΛΗ,
Ποσσὸν ὑπ' ἀθανάτοισι Ποσειδάνως ιόντος.

*As Neptune past, the Mountains and the Wood
Trembled beneath the God's immortal Feet.*

Hence as Wood was perhaps the first and most useful kind of Materials, the Word "Υλη, which denoted it, came to be by degrees extended, and at length to denote MATTER or MATERIALS in general. In this sense Brass was called the "Υλη or Matter of a Statue: Stone, the "Υλη or

EVERY thing in a manner, whether natural or artificial, is in its constitution

Matter of a Pillar; and so in other instances.—The Platonic Chalcidius and other Authors of the latter Latinity use SYLVA under the same extended and comprehensive Signification.

Now as the Species of *Matter* here mentioned (Stone, Metal, Wood, &c.) occur most frequently in common life, and are all nothing more than natural Substances or Bodies, hence by the Vulgar, MATTER and BODY have been taken to denote the same thing; *Material* to mean Corporeal; *Immaterial, Incorporeal, &c.* But this was not the Sentiment of Philosophers of old, by whom the Term *Matter* was seldom used under so narrow an acceptation. By these, every thing was called ΥΛΗ, or MATTER, whether corporeal or incorporeal, which was capable of becoming something else, or of being moulded into something else, whether from the operation of Art, of Nature, or a higher Cause.

In this sense they not only called *Brass* the "Υλη of a Statue, and Timber, of a Boat, but Letters and Syllables they called the "Υλαι of Words; Words or simple Terms, the "Υλαι of Propositions; and Propositions themselves the "Υλαι of Syllogisms. The Stoicks held all things out of our own power ($\tauὰ \ ἐκ \ ἡφ' \ \etaμῖν$) such as Wealth and Poverty, Honour and Dishonour, Health and Sickness,

compounded of something COMMON,
and something PECULIAR; of something

Life and Death, to be the "Υλαι or *Materials of Virtue or Moral Goodness*, which had its essence in a proper conduct with respect to all these (Vid. *Arr. Epict.* L. I. c. 29. Also Vol. the first of these miscellaneous treatises, p. 187, 309. M. Ant. XII. 29. VII. 29. X. 18, 19. where the 'Υλικὸν and Αἰτιῶδες are opposed to each other). The *Peripatetics*, tho' they expressly held the Soul to be ἀσώματος, or *Incorporeal*, yet still talked of a Νῆς 'Υλικός; a material Mind or Intellect.—This to modern Ears may possibly sound somewhat harshly. Yet if we translate the words, *Natural Capacity*, and consider them as only denoting that *original* and *native Power* of Intellection, which being previous to all *human Knowledge*, is yet necessary to its *reception*; there seems nothing then to remain, that can give us offence. And so much for the Idea of ΥΔΗ, or MATTER. See *Alex. Aphrod. de Anim.* p. 144. b. 145. *Arist. Metaph.* p. 121, 122, 141. *Edit. Sylb. Procl. in Euclid.* p. 22, 23.

As to ΕΙΔΟΣ, its original meaning was that of FORM or FIGURE, considered as denoting visible Symmetry, and Proportion; and hence it had its name from Εἶδω, to see; Beauty of person being one of the noblest and most excellent Objects of Sight. Thus *Euripides*,

Πρῶτον μὲν Εἶδος ἄξιον τυραννίδος.

Fair Form to Empire gave the first pretence.

Common, and belonging to many other things; and of something *Peculiar*, by

Now as the *Form* or *Figure* of visible Beings tended principally to distinguish them, and to give to each its Name and Essence; hence in a more general sense, whatever of any kind (*whether corporeal or incorporeal*), was peculiar, essential, and distinctive, so as by its accession to any Beings, as to its "Υλη, or *Matter*, to mark them with a Character, which they had not before, was called by the Antients ΕΙΔΟΣ or *Form*. Thus not only the *Shape* given to the Brass was called the *Eidōs* or *Form* of the Statue; but the *Proportion* assigned to the Drugs was the *Eidōs* or *Form* of the Medicine; the *orderly Motion* of the human Body was the *Eidōs* or *Form* of the Dance; the *just Arrangement* of the Propositions, the *Eidōs* or *Form* of the Syllogism. In like manner the *rational and accurate Conduct of a wise and good man*, in all the various Relations and Occurrences of life, made that *Eidōs* or *Form*, described by Cicero to his Son,—*FORMAM quidam ipsam, Maree fili, et tanquam faciem HONESTI vides: quæ, si oculis cerneretur, mirabiles amores (ut ait Plato) excitaret sapientia, &c.* De Offic. I.

We may go farther still—THE SUPREME INTELLIGENCE, which passes thro' all things, and which is the same to our Capacities, as Light is to our Eyes, this Supreme Intelligence has been called ΕΙΔΟΣ ΕΙΔΩΝ, THE FORM OF FORMS, as being the Fountain of all Symmetry, of all Good, and of all Truth; and as imparting to every

which it is distinguished, and made to be its true and proper self.

Being those *essential* and *distinctive* Attributes, which make it to be *itself*, and *not any thing else*.

And so much concerning FORM, as before concerning MATTER. We shall only add, that it is in the uniting of these, that every thing generable begins to exist; in their separating, to perish, and be at an end—that while the two co-exist, they co-exist not by *juxta-position*, like the stones in a wall, but by a more intimate Coincidence, complete in the minutest part—that hence, if we were to persist in dividing any substance (for example Marble) to infinity, there would still remain after every section both Matter and Form, and these as perfectly united, as before the division began—lastly, that they are both pre-existent to the Beings, which they constitute; the Matter being to be found in the world at large; the Form, if artificial, pre-existing within the *Artificer*, or if natural, within the Supreme Cause, the Sovereign Artist of the Universe,

—*Pulchrum pulcherrimus ipse
Mundum mente gerens, similique in imagine formans.*

Even without speculating so high as this, we may see among all animal and vegetable Substances, the Form pre-existing in their immediate generating Cause; Oak being the parent of Oak, Lion of Lion, Man of Man, &c.

HENCE LANGUAGE, if compared according to this notion to the murmurs of a Fountain, or the dashings of a Cataract, has *in common* this, that like them, *it is a SOUND*. But then on the contrary it has

Cicero's account of these Principles is as follows.

MATTER.

Sed subjectam putant omnibus sine ulla specie, atque carentem omni illa qualitate (faciamus enim tractando unitius hoc verbum et tritus) MATERIAM quandam, ex qua omnia expressa atque efficta sint (qua tota omnia accipere possit, omnibusque modis mutari atque ex omni parte): eisque etiam interire, non in nihilum, &c.—Acad. I. 8.

FORM.

Sed ego sic statuo, nihil esse in ullo genere tam pulchrum, quo non pulchrius id sit, unde illud, ut ex ore aliquo, quasi imago, exprimatur, quod neque oculis, neque auribus, neque ullo sensu percipi potest: cogitatione tantum et mente complectimur.—HAS REBUM FORMAS appellat Ideis ille non intelligendi solum; sed etiam dicendi gravissimus auctor et magister, Plato: easque gigni negat, et ait semper esse, ac ratione et intelligentia contineri: cætera nasci, occidere, fovere, labi; nec diutius esse uno et eodem statu. Quidquid est igitur, de quo ratione et viâ disputetur, id est ad ultimam sui generis Formam speciemque ridigendum. Cic. ad M. Brut. Orat.

in peculiar this, that whereas those Sounds have *no Meaning or Signification*, to Language *a MEANING or SIGNIFICATION is essential*.—Again, *Language*, if compared to the Voice of irrational Animals, has *in common* this, that like them, *it has a Meaning*. But then it has this *in peculiar* to distinguish it from them, that whereas the *Meaning* of those Animal Sounds is derived *from NATURE*, that of Language is derived, not from Nature, but *from COMPACT.*⁴⁴

⁴⁴ The *Peripatetics* (and with just reason) in all their definitions as well of Words as of Sentences, made it a part of their character to be significant καὶ συνθήκην, by Compact. See Aristot. de Interp. c. 2. 4. Boethius translates the Words καὶ συνθήκην, *ad placitum*, or *secundum placitum*, and thus explains them in his comment.—**SECUNDUM PLACITUM** vero est, quod secundum quandam positionem, placitumque ponentis aptatur; nullum enim nomen naturaliter constitutum est, neque unquam, sicut subjecta res à naturā est, ita quoque a naturā veniente vocabulo nuncupatur. Sed hominum genus, quod et ratione, et oratione vigeret, nomina posuit, eaque quibus

FROM hence it becomes evident, that **L****A****N****G****U****A****E**, taken in the most comprehensive view, *implies certain Sounds, having certain Meanings*; and that of these two Principles, the **S****O****U****N****D** is as the **M****A****T****T****E****R**, common (like other Matter) to many different things; the **M****E****A****N****I****N****G** as that peculiar and characteristic **F****O****R****M**, by which the Nature or Essence of Language becomes complete.

libuit literis syllabisque conjungens, singulis subjectarum rerum substantiis dedit. Boeth. in Lib. de Interpret. p. 308.

CHAP. II.

Upon the Matter or common Subject of Language.

THE ΥΛΗ or MATTER OF LANGUAGE comes first to be considered, a Subject, which Order will not suffer us to omit, but in which we shall endeavour to be as concise as we can. Now this ΥΛΗ or Matter is SOUND, and SOUND is *that Sensation peculiar to the Sense of Hearing, when the Air hath felt a Percussion, adequate to the producing such Effect.*^(a)

^(a) This appears to be *Priscian's* Meaning when he says of a VOICE, what is more properly true of SOUND in general, that it is—*suum sensible aurium, id est, quod propriè auribus accidit.* Lib. I. p. 537.

The following account of the *Stoicks*, which refers the cause of SOUND to an *Undulation in the Air propagated circularly*, as when we drop a stone into a Cistern of water, seems to accord with the modern Hypothesis, and to be as plausible as any—Ακούειν δὲ, τῷ μεταξὺ τῷ τε

As the Causes of this Percussion are various, so from hence *Sound* derives the Variety of its Species.

FARTHER, as all these Causes are either Animal or Inanimate, so the two grand Species of Sounds are likewise *Animal* or *Inanimate*.

THERE is no peculiar Name for *Sound Inanimate*; nor even for that of Animals, when made by the trampling of their Feet, the fluttering of their Wings, or any other Cause, which is merely *accidental*. But that, *which they make by proper Organs, in consequence of some Sensation or inward*

φωνοῦντος ἡ τῇ ἀκέσοντος ἀέρος πληττομένη σφαιροειδῶς,
εἴτα κυματουμένης, ἡ ταῖς ἀκοαῖς προσπίπτοντος, ὡς
κυματεῖται τὸ ἐν τῷ δεξαμενῷ ὕδωρ κατὰ κύκλους ὑπὸ τῷ
ἐμβληθέντος λίθῳ—Porro audire, cum is, qui medius inter
loquentem, et audientem est, aër verberatur orbiculariter,
deinde agitatus, auribus influit, quemadmodum et cisterne
aqua per orbes injecto agitatur lapide. Diog. Laert. VII.

Impulse, such Animal Sound is called a Voice.

As Language therefore implies that Sound called HUMAN VOICE; we may perceive that *to know the Nature and Powers of the Human Voice*, is in fact to know THE MATTER or common Subject of Language.

Now the Voice of Man, and it should seem of all other Animals, is formed by certain Organs between the Mouth and the Lungs, and which Organs maintain the intercourse between these two. The Lungs furnish Air, out of which the Voice is formed; and the Mouth, when the Voice is formed, serves to publish it abroad.

WHAT these Vocal Organs precisely are, is not in all respects agreed by Philosophers and Anatomists. Be this as

it will, it is certain that the *mere primary and simple Voice is completely formed, before ever it reach the Mouth,* and can therefore (as well as Breathing) find a Passage thro' the Nose, when the Mouth is so far stopt, as to prevent the least utterance.

Now *pure and simple Voice*, being thus produced, is (as before was observed) *transmitted to the Mouth.* HERE then, by means of certain *different Organs*, which do not change its primary Qualities, but only superadd others, it receives the *Form or Character of ARTICULATION.* For *ARTICULATION* is in fact nothing else, than *that Form or Character, acquired to simple Voice, by means of the Mouth and its several Organs, the Teeth, the Tongue, the Lips, &c.* The Voice is not by Articulation made more grave or Acute, more loud or soft (which are its *primary Qualities*) but it acquires

to these Characters certain *others additional*, which are perfectly adapted *to exist along with them.*⁽⁶⁾

(6) The several Organs above mentioned not only serve the purposes of *Speech*, but those very different ones likewise of *Mastication* and *Respiration*; so frugal is Nature in thus assigning them double duty, and so careful to maintain her character of *doing nothing in vain*.

He, that would be informed, how much better the Parts here mentioned are framed for *Discourse* in *Man*, who is a *Discursive Animal*, than they are in other Animals, who are not so, may consult *Aristotle* in his *Treatise de Animal. Part. Lib. II. c. 17. Lib. III. c. 1. 3. De Animal. L. II. c. 8. § 23, &c.*

And here by the way, if such Inquirer be of a Genius truly modern, he may possibly wonder how the Philosopher, considering (as it is modestly phrased) the Age in which he lived, should know so much, and reason so well. But if he have any taste or value for antient literature, he may with much juster cause wonder at the Vanity of his Contemporaries, who dream all Philosophy to be the Invention of their own Age, knowing nothing of those Antients still remaining for their perusal, tho' they are so ready on every occasion to give the preference to *themselves*.

THE *simplest* of these new Characters
are those acquired thro' the mere Open-

The following account from *Ammonius* will show whence the Notions in this chapter are taken, and what authority we have to distinguish VOICE from mere SOUND; and ARTICULATE VOICE from SIMPLE VOICE.

Καὶ ΨΟΦΟΣ μέν ἐτι πληγὴ ἀέρος αἰσθητὴ ἀκοῆ· ΦΩΝΗ δὲ, ψόφος ἐξ ἐμψύχου γινόμενος, οὐαν διὰ τῆς συστολῆς τοῦ θύρακος ἐκθλιβόμενος ἀπὸ τοῦ πνεύμονος ὁ εἰσπνευθεὶς ἀηρὶ προσπίπτῃ ἀθρόως τῷ καλομένῳ τραχεῖᾳ ἀρτηρίᾳ, οὐ τῇ ὑπερώῃ, ἥτοι τῷ γαργαρῶνι, οὐ διὰ τῆς πληγῆς ἀποτελῆ τινα ἥχον αἰσθητὸν, κατά τινα δρμὴν τῆς ψυχῆς διερ οὐ πληγῆς ἐμπνευστῶν παρὰ τοῖς μεσικοῖς καλεμένων δργάνων συμβαίνει, οἷον αὐλῶν οὐ συρίγγων τῆς γλώττης, οὐ τῶν δδοντων, οὐ χειλέων πρὸς μὲν ΤΗΝ ΔΙΑΛΕΚΤΟΝ ἀναγκαίων δυτῶν, πρὸς δὲ ΤΗΝ ἈΠΛΩΣ ΦΩΝΗΝ ἐπάντις συμβαλλομένων.—*Estque Sonus, ictus aeris qui auditum sentitur: Vox autem est sonus, quem animatus edit, cum per thoracis compressionem aer attractus a pulmone, ictus simul totus in arteriam, quam asperam vocant, et palatum, aut gurgulionem impingit, et ex ictu sonum quendam sensibilem pro animi quodam impetu perficit. Id quod in instrumentis quæ quia inflant, ideo empenet a muricis dicuntur, usi venit, ut in tibüs, ac fistulis contingit, cum lingua, dentes, labidique ad loquaciam necessaria sint, ad vocem vero simplicem non omnino conferant.* Ammon. in Lib. de Interpr. p. 25. b. Vid. etiam Boerhaave Institut. Medic. Sect. 626. 630.

ings of the Mouth, as these Openings differ in giving the Voice a Passage. It is the Variety of Configurations in these Openings only, which gives birth and origin to the several VOWELS; and hence it is they derive their Name, by being thus *eminently Vocal,*^(c) and *easy to be sounded of themselves alone.*

THERE are other articulate Forms, which the Mouth makes, not by mere Openings, but by different Contacts of its different parts; such, for instance, as it makes by

It appears that the Stoics (contrary to the notion of the Peripatetics) used the word ΦΩΝΗ to denote SOUND in general. They defined it therefore to be—Τὸ ἴδιον αἰσθητὸν ἀκοῆς, which justifies the definition given by Priscian, in the Note preceding. ANIMAL SOUND they defined to be—Ἄήρ, ὁπός ἀρχής πεπληγμένος, Air struck (and so made audible) by some animal impulse; and HUMAN or RATIONAL SOUND they defined—Ἐναρθρός καὶ ἀριθμούμενος, Sound articulate and derived from the discursive faculty. Diag. Laert. VII. 55.

^(c) ΦΩΝΗΕΝΤΑ.

the Junction of the two Lips, of the Tongue with the Teeth, of the Tongue with the Palate, and the like.

Now as all these several Contacts, unless some Opening of the Mouth either immediately precede, or immediately follow, would rather occasion Silence, than to produce a Voice ; hence it is, that with some such Opening, either previous or subsequent, they are always connected. Hence also it is, that the *Articulations so produced* are called CONSONANT, because they sound not of themselves, and from their own powers, but *at all times in company with some Auxiliary Vowel.*⁽⁴⁾

THERE are other subordinate Distinctions of these primary Articulations, which to enumerate would be foreign to the design of this Treatise.

IT is enough to observe, that they are all denoted by the common Name of ELEMENT,[“] in as much as every Articulation of every other kind is from them derived, and into them resolved. Under their *smallest Combination* they produce a *Syllable*; Syllables properly combined produce a *Word*; Words properly combined produce a *Sentence*; and Sentences properly combined produce an *Oration* or *Discourse*.

[“] The Stoic Definition of an ELEMENT is as follows—
Ἐσι δὲ τοιχεῖον, ἐξ οὐ πρώτω γίνεται τὰ γινόμενα καὶ εἰς δέσχατον ἀναληνται. An ELEMENT is that, out of which, as their first Principle, things generated are made, and into which, as their last remains, they are resolved. Diog. Laert. VII. 176. What Aristotle says upon ELEMENTS with respect to the Subject here treated, is worth attending to—Φώνῆς τοιχεῖα, ἐξ ᾧ σύγκειται ἡ φωνὴ, καὶ εἰς διαιρεῖται ἔσκατα· ἐκεῖνα δὲ μηκέτ’ εἰς ἄλλας φωνὰς ἐτέρας τῷ εἶδει αὐτῶν. The ELEMENTS OF ARTICULATE VOICE are those things, out of which the VOICE is compounded, and into which, as its last remains, it is divided: the Elements themselves being no farther divisible into other articulate Voices, differing in Species from them. Metaph. V. c. 3.

AND thus it is that to Principles *apparently* so trivial,^o as about twenty plain elementary Sounds, we owe that variety of articulate Voices, which have been

^o The Egyptians paid divine Honours to the *Inventor of letters*, and *Regulator of Language*, whom they called THEUTH. By the GREEKS he was worshipped under the Name of HERMES, and represented commonly by a *Head alone without other Limbs*, standing upon a *quadrilateral Basis*. The Head itself was *that of a beautiful Youth*, having on it a *Pegasus*, or *Bonnet*, adorned with two *Wings*.

There was a peculiar reference in this Figure to the ΕΡΜΗΣ ΛΟΓΙΟΣ, THE HERMES OF LANGUAGE OR DISCOURSE. He possessed no other part of the human figure but the HEAD, because *no other* was deemed requisite to rational Communication. Words at the same time, the medium of this Communication, being (as Homer well describes them) Επεια πτεροέντα, *Winged Words*, were represented in their Velocity by the WINGS of his Bonnet.

Let us suppose such a HERMES, having the *Front of his Basis* (the usual place for Inscriptions) adorned with some old Alphabet, and having a Veil flung across, by which that Alphabet is partly covered. Let A YOUTH be seen drawing off this Veil; and A NYMPH, near the Youth, transcribing what She there discovers..

sufficient to explain the Sentiments of so innumerable a Multitude, as all the present and past Generations of Men.

Such a Design would easily indicate its Meaning. THE YOUTH we might imagine to be THE GENIUS OF MAN (*Natureæ Deus humanae*, as Horace stiles him); THE NYMPH to be MNHMOΣΥΝΗ, or MEMORY; as much as to insinuate, that "MAN, for the Preservation of his "Deeds and Inventions, was necessarily obliged to have recourse to LETTERS; and that MEMORY, being conscious of her own Insufficiency, was glad to avail herself "of so valuable an Acquisition."

Mrs. STUART, well known for his accurate and elegant Edition of the Antiquities of Athens, has adorned this Work with a Frontispiece agreeable to the above Ideas; and that in a taste truly Attic and Simple, which no one possesses more eminently than himself.

As to HERMES, his History, Genealogy, Mythology, Figure, &c. Vid. Platon. *Phileb.* T. II. p. 18. Edit. Serran. Diod. Sic. L. I. Horat. Od. X. L. I. Henod. *Theog.* V. 937. cum Comment. Joan. Diaconi. Thucid. VI. 27. et Scholiast. in loc. *Pighium apud Gronov. Thesaur.* T. IX. p. 1164.

For the value and importance of Principles, and the difficulty in attaining them, see Aristot. *de Sophist. Elench.* c. 34.

IT appears from what has been said, that THE MATTER OR COMMON SUBJECT OF LANGUAGE IS *that Species of Sounds called Voices ARTICULATE.*

WHAT remains to be examined in the following Chapter, is Language under its characteristic and peculiar FORM, that is to say, Language considered, not with respect to *Sound*, but to *Meaning*.

The following Passage, taken from that able Mathematician *Tacquet*, will be found peculiarly pertinent to what has been said in this chapter concerning *Elementary Sounds*, p. 324. 325.

Mille millions scriptorum mille annorum millionibus non scribent omnes 24 litterarum alphabeti permutationes, licet singuli quotidie absolvarent 40 paginas, quarum unaqueque contineret diversos ordines literarum 24. Tacquet. Arithmetice Theor. p. 381. Edit. Antwerp. 1663.

CHAP. III.

*Upon the Form, or peculiar Character of
Language.*

WHEN to any articulate Voice there accedes *by compact* a Meaning or Signification, such Voice by such accession is then called A WORD; and many Words, possessing their Significations (as it were) *under the same Compact,*^(a) unite in constituting A PARTICULAR LANGUAGE.

^(a) See before Note ^(c) p. 314. See also Vol. I. Treatise II. c. 1. Notes ^(a) and ^(c).

The following Quotation from *Ammonius* is remarkable — Καθάπερ ἐν τὸ μὲν κατὰ τόπον κινεῖσθαι, φύσει, τὸ δὲ δρχεῖσθαι, θέσει ἢ κατὰ συνθήκην, ἢ τὸ μὲν ξύλον, φύσει, ἡ δὲ θύρα, θέσει· ὅτω ἢ τὸ μὲν φωνεῖν, φύσει, τὸ δὲ δὶς διομάτων ἡ ρημάτων σημαίνειν, θέσει—ἢ ξους τὴν μὲν φωνητικὴν δύναμιν, δργανον ἵσαν τῶν ψυχικῶν ἐν ἡμῖν

It appears from hence, that a Word may be defined *a Voice articulate, and significant by Compact*—and that LANGUAGE may be defined *a System of such Voices, so significant*.

IT is from notions like these concerning Language and Words, that one may

δυνάμεων γνωσικῶν, ἡ δρεκτικῶν, κατὰ φύσιν ἔχειν διανθρωπος παραπλησίως τοῖς ἀλόγοις ζώοις· τὸ δὲ δύναμασιν, ἡ ρήμασιν, ἡ τοῖς ἐκ τέτων συγκειμένοις λόγοις χρῆσθαι πρὸς τὴν σημασίαν (ἐκέτι φύσει δύσιν, ἀλλὰ θέσει) ἐξαρτεονται ἔχειν πρὸς τὰ ἀλογα ζῶα, διότι ἡ μόνος τῶν θυητῶν αὐτοκινήτων μετέχει ψυχῆς, ἡ τεχνικῶς ἐνεργεῖν δύναμένης, ἵνα ἡ ἐν αὐτῷ τῷ φωνεῖν ἡ τεχνικὴ αὐτῆς διακρίνηται δύναμις· δελέσσοι δὲ ταῦτα οἱ εἰς κάλλος συντίθεμενοι λόγοι μετὰ μέτρων, ἡ ἄνευ μέτρων. In the same manner therefore, as local Motion is from Nature, but Dancing is something positive; and as Timber exists in Nature, but a Door is something positive; so is the power of producing a vocal Sound founded in Nature, but that of explaining ourselves by Nouns, or Verbs, something positive. And hence it is, that as to the simple power of producing vocal Sound (which is as it were the Organ or Instrument to the Soul's faculties of Knowledge or Volition) as to this vocal power I say, Man seems to possess it from

be tempted to call LANGUAGE a kind of PICTURE OF THE UNIVERSE, where the Words are as the Figures or Images of all particulars.

AND yet it may be doubted, how far this is true. For if *Pictures* and *Images*

Nature, in like manner as irrational animals : but as to the employing of Nouns, or Verbs, or Sentences composed out of them, in the explanation of our Sentiments (the thing thus employed being founded, not in Nature, but in Position) this he seems to possess by way of peculiar eminence, because he alone of all mortal Beings partakes of a Soul, which can move itself, and operate artificially ; so that even in the Subject of Sound his artificial Power shows itself ; as the various elegant Compositions both in Metre, and without Metre, abundantly prove. Ammon. de. Interpr. p. 51, 2.

It must be observed, that the *operating artificially*, (*ἐπεγένετο τεχνικῶς*) of which Ammonius here speaks, and which he considers as a distinctive Mark peculiar to the *Human Soul*, means something very different from the mere *producing works of elegance and design* ; else it could never be a mark of Distinction between Man, and many other Species of Animals, such as the Bee, the Beaver, the Swallow, &c. See Vol. I. p. 8, 9, 10, 158, 159, &c.

are all of them *Imitations*, it will follow, that whoever has natural faculties to know the Original, will by help of the same faculties know also its Imitations. But it by no means follows, that he who knows any Being, should know for that reason its *Greek* or *Latin* Name.

THE Truth is, that every Medium through which we exhibit any thing to another's Contemplation, is either derived from *Natural Attributes*, and then it is an **IMITATION**; or else from *Accidents* quite arbitrary, and then it is a **SYMBOL**.⁽⁶⁾

⁽⁶⁾ Διαφέρει δὲ τὸ ΟΜΟΙΩΜΑ τῷ ΣΥΜΒΟΛΟΥ, καθόσον τὸ μὲν ὁμοίωμα τὴν φύσιν αὐτὴν τῷ πρόγραμμας κατὰ τὸ δυνατὸν ἀπεικονίζεσθαι βέλεσαι, εἰ ἐκ τοῦ ἐφ' ἡμῖν αὐτὸν μετεπλάσαι τὸ γέρεν ἐν τῷ εἰκόνι γεγραμμένο τῷ Σωκράτες ὁμοίωμα, εἰ μὴ εἰ τὸ φαλακρὸν, εἰ τὰ σημὰν ἢ τὸ ἔξωφθαλμὸν ἔχει τῷ Σωκράτες, ἐκτένα αὐτῆς λέγοισο εἶναι ὁμοίωμα τὸ δέ γε σύμβολον, ὅτοι σημεῖον (ἀμφότερα γάρ ὁ φιλόσοφος αὐτὸν διηρέει), τὸ δὲλου ἐφ' ἡμῖν ἔχει, ὅτε δὲ εἰ μόνης ὑφιτάμενον τῆς ἡμετέρας ἐπινοίας οἷον, τῷ πότε δεῖ

Now, if it be allowed that in far the greater part of things, not any of their *natural Attributes* are to be found in articulate Voices, and that yet through such Voices things of every kind are exhibited, it will follow that WORDS *must of necessity be SYMBOLS*, because it appears that they cannot be *Imitations*.

BUT here occurs a Question, which deserves attention—“ Why, in the common intercourse of men with men, have “ Imitations been neglected, and Symbols

συμβάλλειν ἀλλήλοις τὰς πολεμῶντας, δύναται σύμβολον εἶναι ἢ σάλπιγγος ἀπήχεσις, ἢ λαμπάδος ρίψις, καθάπερ φησὶν Εὐριπίδης,

Ἐπεὶ δὲ ἀφείθη πυρσὸς, ὡς τυρσηνικῆς
Σάλπιγγος ἥχος, σῆμα φοιοῦν μάχης.

Δύναται δέ τις ὑποθεσθαι ἢ δόρατος ἀνάτασιν, ἢ βέλος ἄφεσιν, ἢ αλλὰ μυρία.—A REPRESENTATION or RESEMBLANCE differs from a SYMBOL, in as much as the Resemblance aims as far as possible to represent the very nature of the thing, nor is it in our power to shift or vary it. Thus a REPRESENTATION intended for Socrates in a Picture, if it have not those circumstances peculiar to

“ preferred, although Symbols are only known by Habit or Institution, while Imitations are recognized by a kind of natural Intuition?” To this it may be answered, that if the Sentiments of the Mind, like the Features of the Face, were immediately visible to every beholder, the Art of Speech or Discourse would have been perfectly superfluous. But now, while our Minds lie enveloped and hid, and the Body (like a Veil) conceals every thing but itself, we are necessarily

Socrates, the bald, the flat-nosed, and the Eyes projecting, cannot properly be called a Representation of him. But a SYMBOL or SIGN (for the Philosopher Aristotle uses both names) is wholly in our own power, as depending singly for its existence on our imagination. Thus for example, as to the time when two armies should engage, the Symbol or Sign may be the sounding of a Trumpet, the throwing of a Torch (according to what Euripides says,

*But when the flaming Torch was hurl'd, the sign
Of purple fight, as when the Trumpet sounds, &c.)
or else one may suppose the elevating of a Spear, the darting of a Weapon, and a thousand ways besides. Ammon.
in Lib. de Interp. p. 17. b.*

compelled, when we communicate our Thoughts, to convey them to each other through a *Medium which is Corporeal.*^(c) And hence it is, that all Signs, Marks, Imitations, and Symbols must needs be sensible, and addressed as such to the Senses.^(d) Now THE SENSES, we know, never exceed their natural Limits; the Eye perceives no Sounds; the Ear perceives no Figures nor Colours. If therefore we were to converse, not by *Symbols*

^(c) Αἱ ψυχαὶ αἱ ἡμέτεραι, γυμναὶ μὲν ὅσαι τῶν σωμάτων, ἥδιναντο δί' αὐτῶν τῶν νοημάτων σημάνειν ἀλλήλαις τὸ πράγματα· Ἐπειδὴ δὲ σώματα συνδέουται, δικῆν τέφεσ παρικαλπτεσιν αὐτῷ τὸ νοερὸν, ἐδειθησαν τῶν ὄνομάτων, δι' ᾧν σημαίνεσιν ἀλλήλαις τὰ πράγματα. *Animi nostri a corporis compagine secreti rea vicietim animi conceptionibus significare possent: cum autem corporibus involuti sint, perinde ut subtilitatis operum intelligentia vix obligatur: quocirca opus eis fitiū nominabue, quibus ree inter se significanterent.* Ammon. in Predicam. p. 18, a.

^(d) Quidquid sciendi possit in differentiis satis numerosas, ad notitiam varietatem explicandam (modo differentias illas sensui perceptibiles sint) fieri potest vehiculum cogitationum de homine in hominem. Bacon. de Augm. Scient. VI. 1.

but by *Imitations*, as far as things are characterized by Figure and Colour, our Imitation would be necessarily thro' Figure and Colour also. Again, as far as they are characterized by Sounds, it would for the same reason be thro' the Medium of Sounds. The like may be said of all the other Senses, the Imitation still shifting along with the Objects imitated. We see then how *complicated* such Imitation would prove.

If we set LANGUAGE therefore, as a *Symbol*, in opposition to *such Imitation*; if we reflect on the Simplicity of the one, and the Multiplicity of the other; if we consider the Ease and Speed with which Words are formed (an Ease which knows no trouble or fatigue; and a *Speed, which equals the Progress of our very Thoughts) if we oppose to this the diffi-

* Επει προσέντα—See before, p. 325.

culty and length of Imitations ; if we remember that some Objects are capable of no Imitations at all, but that all Objects universally may be typified by Symbols ; we may plainly perceive an Answer to the Question here proposed, “ Why, in the “ common intercourse of men with men, “ Imitations have been rejected, and Sym-“ bols preferred ? ”

HENCE too we may perceive a Reason, *why there never was a Language, nor indeed can possibly be framed one, to express the Properties and real Essences of things,* as a Mirrour exhibits their Figures and their Colours. For if Language of itself imply nothing more, than *certain Species of Sounds with certain Motions concomitant* ; if to some Beings sound and Motion are no Attributes at all ; if to many others, where Attributes, they are no way essential (such as the Murmurs and Wavings of a Tree during a storm) if this be true—it is

impossible the Nature of such Beings should be expressed; or the least essential Property be any way imitated, while between *the Medium* and *themselves* there is nothing CON-NATURAL.¹⁰

IT is true, indeed, when *Primitives* were once established, it was easy to follow the Connection and Subordination of Nature, in the just deduction of *Derivatives* and *Compounds*. Thus the Sounds, *Water* and *Fire*, being once annexed to those two Elements, it was certainly more natural to call Beings participating of the first, *Watery*, of the last, *Fiery*, than to commute the Terms, and call them by the reverse. But why, and from what *natural Connections* the Primitives themselves might not be commuted, it will be found, I believe, difficult to assign a Reason, as well in the instances before us, as in most others.

¹⁰ See Vol. I. Treatise II. c. 8. p. 70.

We may here also see the Reason, why ALL LANGUAGE IS FOUNDED IN COMPACT, and not in Nature; for so are all Symbols, of which Words are a certain Species.

THE Question remains if WORDS are Symbols, then SYMBOLS OF WHAT?—If it be answered, OF THINGS, the Question returns, OF WHAT THINGS?—If it be answered, of the several Individuals of Sense, the various particular Beings which exist around us—to this, it is replied, may be raised certain Doubts. In the first place every Word will be, in fact, a proper Name. Now if all Words are proper Names, how came Lexicographers, whose express business is to explain Words, either wholly to omit proper Names, or at least to explain them, not from their own Art, but from History?

AGAIN, if all Words are proper Names, then in strictness no Word can belong to more than one Individual. But if so,

then, as *Individuals* are *infinite*, to make a perfect Language, *Words must be infinite also*. But if infinite, then *incomprehensible*, and never to be attained by the wisest Men ; whose labours in Language upon this Hypothesis would be as idle as that study of infinite written Symbols, which Missionaries (if they may be credited) attribute to the Chinese.

AGAIN, if all *Words* are *proper Names*, or (which is the same) the Symbols of *Individuals*; it will follow, as *Individuals* are not only *infinite*, but ever *passing*, that the Language of those, who lived ages ago, will be as unknown now, as the very Voices of the Speakers. Nay the Language of every Province, of every Town, of every Cottage, must be every where different, and every where changing, since such is the Nature of *Individuals*, which it follows.

AGAIN, if all *Words* are *proper Names*,

the Symbols of *Individuals*, it will follow that in Language there can be no *general Proposition*, because upon the Hypothesis all *Terms* are *particular*; nor any *Affirmative Proposition*, because *no one Individual in nature is another*. It remains, there can be no Propositions, but *Particular Negatives*. But if so, then is Language incapable of communicating *General Affirmative Truths*—If so, then of communicating *Demonstration*—If so, then of communicating Sciences, which are so many Systems of Demonstrations—If so, then of communicating *Arts*, which are the Theorems of Science applied practically—If so, we shall be little the better for it either in Speculation or in Practice.^(e) And so much for this Hypothesis; let us now try another.

^(e) The whole of *Euclid* (whose Elements may be called the basis of Mathematical Science) is founded upon *general Terms*, and *general Propositions*, most of which are *affirmative*. So true are those Verses, however barbarous as to their stile,

*Syllogizari non est ex Particulari,
Neve Negativis, recè concludere si vis.*

IF WORDS are not the Symbols of *external Particulars*, it follows of course, they must be THE SYMBOLS OF OUR IDEAS: For this is evident, if they are not Symbols of things *without*, they can only be Symbols of something *within*.

HERE then the Question recurs, if SYMBOLS OF IDEAS, then of WHAT IDEAS? —OF SENSIBLE IDEAS.—Be it so, and what follows?—Every thing in fact, which has followed already from the supposition of their being the Symbols of *external Particulars*; and that from this plain and obvious reason, because the several Ideas, which *Particulars* imprint, must needs be as infinite and mutable as they are themselves.

IF then Words are neither the Symbols of *external Particulars*, nor yet of *particular Ideas*, they can be SYMBOLS of nothing else, except of GENERAL IDEAS, because nothing else, except these, remains.—And

what do we mean by GENERAL IDEAS?—We mean such as are common to many individuals; not only to individuals which exist now, but which existed in ages past, and will exist in ages future; such for example, as the Ideas belonging to the Words, *Man*, *Lion*, *Cedar*.—Admit it, and what follows?—It follows, that if *Words* are the *Symbols* of such general Ideas, Lexicographers may find employ, though they meddle not with *proper Names*.

It follows that one *Word* may be, not homonymously, but truly and essentially common to many *Particulars*, past, present, and future; so that however these *Particulars* may be infinite, and ever fleeting, yet Language notwithstanding may be definite and steady. But if so, then attainable even by ordinary Capacities, without danger of incurring the *Chinese Absurdity*.*

* See p. 338, 339.

AGAIN, it follows that the Language of those, who lived ages ago, as far as it stands for the same general Ideas, may be as intelligible now, as it was then. The like may be said of the same Language being accommodated to distant Regions, and even to distant Nations, amidst all the variety of ever new and ever changing Objects.

AGAIN, it follows that Language may be expressive of general Truths; and if so, then of Demonstration, and Sciences, and Arts; and if so, become subservient to purposes of every kind.⁶⁹

Now if it be true "that none of these "things could be asserted of Language, "were not Words the Symbols of general "Ideas—and if it be further true, that these "things may be all undeniably asserted "of Language"—it will follow (and that

⁶⁹ See before, Note ⁽⁶⁾.

necessarily) that WORDS ARE THE SYMBOLS OF GENERAL IDEAS.

AND yet perhaps even here may be an Objection. It may be urged, if Words are the Symbols of *general Ideas*, Language may answer well enough the purpose of Philosophers, who reason about *general* and *abstract Subjects*—but what becomes of the business of ordinary Life? Life we know is merged in a multitude of *Particulars*, where an Explanation by Language is as requisite, as in the highest Theorems. The Vulgar indeed want it to *no other End*. How then can this End in any respect be answered, if Language be expressive of nothing further than *general Ideas*?

To this it may be answered, that *Arts* surely respect the business of ordinary Life; yet so far are *general Terms* from being an Obstacle here, that without them no Art can be *rationally explained*. How

for instance should the measuring Artist ascertain to the Reapers the price of their labours, had not the first through *general Terms* learnt those *general Theorems*, that respect the doctrine and practice of *Mensuration*?

BUT suppose this not to satisfy a persevering Objector—suppose him to insist, that, admitting this to be true, *there were still a multitude of occasions for minute particularizing, of which it was not possible for mere Generals to be susceptible*—suppose, I say, such an Objection, what should we answer?—*That the Objection was just*; that it was necessary *to the Perfection and Completion of LANGUAGE, that it should be expressive of PARTICULARS, as well as of GENERALS*. We must, however, add, that its *general Terms* are by far its most *excellent and essential Part*, since from these it derives “that comprehensive “*Universality*, that just proportion of

“*Precision and Permanence*, without which
“ it could not possibly be either learnt, or
“ understood, or applied to the purposes
“ of Reasoning and Science;”—that *particular Terms* have their Utility and End,
and that therefore care too has been taken
for a supply of these.

One Method of expressing Particulars,
is that of PROPER NAMES. This is the
least artificial, because proper Names being
in every district arbitrarily applied, may
be unknown to those, who know the Lan-
guage perfectly well, and can hardly there-
fore with propriety be considered as parts
of it. The other and more artificial Method
is that of DEFINITIVES or ARTICLES,⁽¹⁾
whether we assume the *pronominal*, or those
more strictly so called. And here we can-
not enough admire the exquisite *Art* of

⁽¹⁾ See before p. 72, &c. 238, &c.

Language, which, without wandering into infinitude, contrives how to denote things infinite; that is to say in other words, which, by the small Tribe of *Definitives* properly applied to general Terms, knows how to employ these last, tho' in number finite, to the accurate expression of infinite Particulars.

To explain what has been said by a single example. Let the general Term be **MAN**. I have occasion to apply this Term to the denoting of some Particular. Let it be required to express this Particular, as *unknown*; I say, a *Man*—*known*; I say, **THE Man**—*indefinite*; **ANY Man**—*definite*; **A CERTAIN Man**—*present and near*; **THIS Man**—*present and distant*; **THAT Man**—*like to some other*; **SUCH A Man**—*an indefinite Multitude*; **MANY Men**—*a definite Multitude*; **A THOUSAND Men**—*the ones of a Multitude, taken throughout*; **EVERY Man**—*the same ones, taken with distinction*;

EACH *Man*—*taken in order*; FIRST *Man*, SECOND *Man*, &c.—the whole Multitude of Particulars taken collectively; ALL *Men*—the Negation of this Multitude; NO *Man*. But of this we have spoken already, when we inquired concerning Definitives.

THE Sum of all is, that WORDS ARE THE SYMBOLS OF IDEAS BOTH GENERAL AND PARTICULAR; YET OF THE GENERAL, PRIMARILY, ESSENTIALLY, AND IMMEDIATELY; OF THE PARTICULAR, ONLY SECONDARILY, ACCIDENTALLY, AND MEDIATELY.

SHOULD it be asked, “why has Language this *double Capacity*?”—May we not ask, by way of return, Is it not a kind of reciprocal Commerce, or *Intercourse of our Ideas*? Should it not therefore be framed, so as to express the *whole* of our Perception? Now can we call that Perception intire and whole, which implies

either INTELLECTION without *Sensation*, or SENSATION without *Intellection*? If not, how should Language explain *the whole* of our Perception, had it not Words to express the Objects, proper to each of the two Faculties?

To conclude—As in the preceding Chapter we considered Language with a view to its MATTER, so here we have considered it with a view to its FORM. Its MATTER is recognized, when it is considered *as a Voice*; its FORM, as it is *significant of our several Ideas*; so that upon the whole it may be defined—**A SYSTEM OF ARTICULATE VOICES, THE SYMBOLS OF OUR IDEAS, BUT OF THOSE PRINCIPALLY WHICH ARE GENERAL OR UNIVERSAL.**

CHAP. IV.

Concerning general or universal Ideas.

MUCH having been said in the preceding Chapter about GENERAL OR UNIVERSAL IDEAS, it may not perhaps be amiss to inquire, *by what process we come to perceive them, and what kind of Beings they are;* since the generality of men think so meanly of their existence, that they are commonly considered, as little better than Shadows. These Sentiments are not unusual even with the Philosopher now a days, and that from causes much the same with those which influence the Vulgar.

THE VULGAR merged in Sense from their earliest Infancy, and never once dreaming any thing to be worthy of pursuit, but what either pampers their Appetite, or fills their Purse, imagine nothing to be *real*, but what may be *tasted*, or

touched. THE PHILOSOPHER, as to these matters, being of much the same Opinion, in Philosophy looks no higher, than to *experimental Amusements*, deeming nothing *Demonstration*, if it be not made *ocular*. Thus instead of ascending from *Sense* to *Intellect* (the natural progress of all true Learning) he hurries, on the contrary, into the midst of *Sense*, where he wanders at random without any end, and is lost in a Labyrinth of infinite Particulars. Hence then the reason why the sublimer parts of *Science*, the *Studies of MIND*, *INTELLECTION*, and *INTELLIGENT PRINCIPLES*, are in a manner neglected; and, as if the Criterion of all Truth were an Alembic or an Air-pump, what cannot be proved by *Experiment*, is deemed no better than mere *Hypothesis*.

AND yet it is somewhat remarkable, amid the prevalence of such Notions, that there should still remain two Sciences in

fashion, and these having their Certainty of all the least controverted, *which are not in the minutest article depending upon Experiment.* By these I mean ARITHMETIC and GEOMETRY.^(*) But to come to our Subject concerning GENERAL IDEAS.

^(*) The many noble Theorems (so useful in life, and so admirable in themselves) with which these two SCIENCES so eminently abound, arise originally from PRINCIPLES THE MOST OBVIOUS IMAGINABLE; Principles, so little wanting the pomp and apparatus of EXPERIMENT, that they are *self-evident* to every one possessed of common sense. I would not be understood, in what I have here said, or may have said elsewhere, to undervalue EXPERIMENT; whose importance and utility I freely acknowledge, in the many curious Nostrums and choice Receipts, with which it has enriched the necessary Arts of life. Nay, I go farther—I hold *all justifiable Practice in every kind of Subject* to be founded in EXPERIENCE, which is no more than *the result of many repeated EXPERIMENTS.* But I must add withal, that the man who acts from *Experience alone*, tho' he act ever so well, is but an *Empiric* or *Quack*, and that not only in Medicine, but in every other Subject. It is then only that we recognize *Art*, and that the *EMPIRIC* quits his name for the more honourable one of *ARTIST*, when to his *EXPERIENCE* he adds

MAN'S FIRST PERCEPTIONS are those of the SENSES, in as much as they commence from his earliest Infancy. These Perceptions, if not infinite, are at least *indefinite*, and more *fleeting* and *transient* than the very Objects which they exhibit, because they not only depend upon the

SCIENCE, and is thence enabled to tell us, not only, *WHAT is to be done*, but *WHY it is to be done*; for ART is a composite of *Experience and Science*, Experience providing it *Materials*, and Science giving them a *FORM*.

In the mean time, while EXPERIMENT is thus necessary to all PRACTICAL WISDOM, with respect to PURE and SPECULATIVE SCIENCE, as we have hinted already, it has not the least to do. For who ever heard of *Logic*, or *Geometry*, or *Arithmetic* being proved *experimentally*? It is indeed by the application of *these* that *Experiments* are rendered useful; that they are assumed into Philosophy, and in some degree made a part of it, being otherwise nothing better than puerile amusements. But that these Sciences themselves should depend upon the Subjects on which they work, is, as if the Marble were to fashion the Chizzle, and not the Chizzle the Marble.

existence of those Objects, but because they cannot subsist, without their immediate Presence. Hence therefore it is, that there can be no *Sensation of either Past or Future*, and consequently had the Soul no other Faculties than the *Senses*, it never could acquire the least Idea of *TIME*.⁶⁰

BUT happily for us we are not deserted here. We have in the first place a Faculty, called **IMAGINATION** or **FANCY**, which however as to its *energies* it may be subsequent to Sense, yet is truly prior to it both in *dignity* and *use*. THIS it is which *retains the fleeting Forms of things*, when Things themselves are gone, and *all Sensation at an end*.

THAT this Faculty, however connected with Sense, is still perfectly different, may

⁶⁰ See before, p. 105. See also, p. 112. Note.⁶⁰

be seen from hence. We have an *Imagination* of things, that are gone and extinct; but no such things can be made objects of *Sensation*. We have an easy command over the Objects of our *Imagination*, and can call them forth in almost what manner we please; but our *Sensations* are necessary, when their Objects are present, nor can we controul them, but by removing either the Objects, or ourselves.^(e)

^(e) Besides the distinguishing of SENSATION from IMAGINATION, there are two other Faculties of the Soul, which from their nearer alliance ought carefully to be distinguished from it, and these are MNHMH, and ANAMNHΣΙΣ, MEMORY, and RECOLLECTION.

When we view some *relict* of sensation reposed within us, without thinking of its rise, or referring it to any sensible Object, this is PHANSY or IMAGINATION.

When we view some such *relict*, and refer it *whilst* to that sensible Object, which in time past was its cause and original, this is MEMORY.

As the Wax would not be adequate to its business of Signature, had it not a Power to *retain*, as well as to *receive*; the same holds of the SOUL, with respect to

Lastly, the *Road*, which leads to *Memory* through a series of *Ideas*, however connected, whether rationally or casually, this is RECOLLECTION. I have added *casually*, as well as *rationally*, because a casual connection is often sufficient. Thus from seeing a Garment, I think of its Owner; thence of his Habitation; thence of Woods; thence of Timber; thence of Ships, Sea-fights, Admirals, &c.

If the Distinction between *Memory* and *Phansy* be not sufficiently understood, it may be illustrated by being compared to the view of a Portrait. When we contemplate a Portrait, *without thinking of whom it is the Portrait*, such Contemplation is analogous to PHANSY. When we view it *with reference to the Original, whom it represents*, such Contemplation is analogous to MEMORY.

We may go farther. IMAGINATION or PHANSY may exhibit (after a manner) even *things that are to come*. It is here that *Hope* and *Fear* paint all their pleasant and all their painful Pictures of *Futurity*. But MEMORY is confined in the strictest manner to *the past*.

Sense and Imagination. SENSE is its *receptive Power*; IMAGINATION, its *retentive*. Had it Sense without Imagination, it would not be as Wax, but as Water, where tho' all Impressions may be instantly made, yet as soon as made they are as instantly lost.

THUS, then, from a view of the two Powers taken together, we may call Sense (if we please) *a kind of transient Imagination*; and IMAGINATION on the contrary *a kind of permanent Sense.*⁽⁴⁾

What we have said may suffice for our present purpose. He that would learn more, may consult Aristot. de *Animā*, L. III. c. 3, 4. and his Treatise *de Mem. et. Reminisc.*

“ Τί τοινυν ἐτὸν ἡ φαντασία ὁδε ἀν γνωρίσαμεν. δεῖ νοεῖν ἐν ἡμῖν ἀπὸ τῶν ἐνεργειῶν τῶν περὶ τὰ αἰσθητὰ, οἷον τύπτον (lege τύπον) τινὰ ἢ ἀναζωγράφημα ἐν τῷ πρώτῳ αἰσθητηρὶ, ἐγκατάλειψμά τι τῆς ὑπὸ τῷ αἰσθητῷ γινομένης κινήσεως, δη μηκέτι τῷ αἰσθητῷ παρόντος,

Now as our feet in vain venture to walk upon the River, till the Frost bind the Current, and harden the yielding Surface; so does the SOUL in vain seek to exert its higher Powers, the Powers I mean of REASON and INTELLECT, till IMAGINATION first fix the fluency of SENSE, and thus provide a proper Basis for the support of its higher Energies.

ἴκομένει τὲ οὐ σώζεται, δύνωσης εἰκόνη τις αὐτῷ, δοκεῖ τῆς μνήμης ἡμίν σωζόμενον αἰτιον γίνεται· τὸ τοῦτον ἐγκατάλειψα, οὐ τὸν τοιότον ὀντερ τύπον, ΦΑΝΤΑΣΙΑΝ καλέσσων. Now what PHANSY or IMAGINATION is, we may explain as follows. We may conceive to be formed within us, from the operations of our Senses about sensible Subjects, some Impression (as it were) or Picture in our original Sensorium, being a relict of that motion caused within us by the external object; a relict, which when the external object is no longer present, remains and is still preserved, being as it were its Image, and which, by being thus preserved, becomes the cause of our having Memory. Now such a sort of relict and (as it were) Impression they call PHANSY or IMAGINATION. Alex. Aphrod. de Anima, p. 135. b. Edit. Ald.

AFTER this manner, in the admirable Economy of the Whole, are Natures subordinate made subservient to the higher. Were there *no Things external*, *the Senses* could not operate; were there *no Sensations*, *the Imagination* could not operate; and were there *no Imagination*, there could be *neither Reasoning nor Intellection*, such at least as they are found in *Man*, where they have their Intensions and Remissions in alternate succession, and are at first nothing better, than *a mere CAPACITY or POWER*. Whether every Intellect begins thus, may be perhaps a question; especially if there be any one of a nature *more divine*, to which “Intension and Remission and mere Capacity are unknown.”^(*) But not to digress.

^(*) See p. 162. The *Life, Energy, or Manner of MAN’s Existence* is not a little different from that of the DEITY. THE LIFE OF MAN has its Essence in MOTION. This

IT is then on these permanent Phantasms that THE HUMAN MIND first works, and by an Energy as spontaneous and

is not only true with respect to that lower and subordinate Life, which he shares in common with Vegetables, and which can no longer subsist than while the Fluids circulate, but it is likewise true in that Life, which is peculiar to him as *Man*. Objects from without first move our faculties, and thence we move of ourselves either to *Practice* or *Contemplation*. But the LIFE or EXISTENCE of GOD (as far as we can conjecture upon so transcendent a Subject) is not only complete throughout Eternity, but complete in every Instant, and is for that reason IMMUTABLE and SUPERIOR TO ALL MOTION,

It is to this distinction that Aristotle alludes, when he tells us—Οὐ γὰρ μόνον κινήσεώς ἔτιν ἐνέργεια, ἀλλὰ ἡ ἀκίνησίς· ἡ ήδονὴ μᾶλλον ἐν ἡρεμίᾳ ἐσὶν, ἡ ἐν κινήσει μεταβολὴ δὲ πάντων γλυκὺν, κατὰ τὸν ποιητὴν, διὰ πονηρίαν τινά. ὅπερ γὰρ ἄνθρωπος εὐμεταβολὸς δι πονηρὸς, ἡ δὲ φύσις ἡ δεομένη μεταβολῆς ἐ γὰρ ἀπλῆ, οὐδὲ ἐπιεικῆς. For there is not only an Energy of MOTION, but of IMMOBILITY; and PLEASURE or FELICITY exists rather in REST than in MOTION; Change of all things being sweet (according to the Poet) from a principle of Pravity in those who believe so. For in the same

familiar to its Nature, as the seeing of Colour is familiar to the Eye, it discerns

manner as the bad man is one fickle and changeable, so is that Nature bad that requireth Variety, in as much as such Nature is neither simple nor even. Eth. Nicom. VII. 14. and Ethic. Eudem. VI. *sub. fin.*

It is to this UNALTERABLE NATURE OF THE DEITY that *Boethius* refers, when he say in those elegant verses,

— *Tempus ab Avo*

Ire jubes STABILISQUE MANENS das cuncta moveri.

From this single principle of IMMOBILITY, may be derived some of the noblest of the *Divine Attributes*; such as that of IMPASSIVE, INCORRUPTIBLE, INCORPOREAL, &c. Vide *Aristot. Physic.* VIII. *Metaphys.* XIV. c. 6, 7, 9, 10. Edit. *Du Val.* See also Vol. I. of these Treatises, p. 262 to 266—also p. 295, where the Verses of *Boethius* are quoted at length.

It must be remembered, however, that though we are not *Gods*, yet as *rational Beings* we have within us something *Divine*, and that the more we can become superior to our mutable, variable, and irrational part, and place our welfare in that Good, which is immutable, permanent,

at once what in MANY is ONE; what in things DISSIMILAR and DIFFERENT is SIMILAR and the SAME.⁶ By this it

and rational, the higher we shall advance in real Happiness and Wisdom. This is (as an antient writer says) —'Ομοίωσις τῷ Θεῷ κατὰ τὸ δυνατόν, the becoming like to GOD, as far as in our power. Τοῖς μὲν γὰρ θεοῖς πᾶς ὁ βίος μακάριος· τοῖς δὲ ἀνθρώποις, εἰφ’ δσον δμοίωμά τι τῆς τουανῆς ἐνεργείας ὑπάρχει. For to THE Gods (as says another antient) the whole of life is one continued happiness; but to MEN, it is so far happy, as it rises to the resemblance of so divine an Energy. See Plat. in These-tet. Arist. Eth. X. 8.

⁶ This CONNECTIVE ACT of the Soul, by which it views ONE IN MANY, is perhaps one of the principal Acts of its most excellent part. It is this removes that impenetrable mist, which renders Objects of Intelligence invisible to lower faculties. Were it not for this, even the sensible World (with the help of all our Sensations) would appear as unconnected, as the words of an Index. It is certainly not the Figure alone, nor the Touch alone, nor the Odour alone, that makes the Rose, but it is made up of all these, and other attributes UNITED; not an unknown Constitution of insensible Parts, but a known Constitution of sensible Parts, unless we chuse to extirpate the possibility of natural Knowledge.

comes to behold a kind of *superior Objects* ;
a new Race of Perceptions, more compre-

What then perceives this CONSTITUTION or UNION ?—Can it be any of the Senses ?—No one of these, we know, can pass the limits of its own province. Were the Smell to perceive the union of the Odour and the Figure, it would not only be Smell, but it would be Sight also. It is the same in other instances. We must necessarily therefore recur to some HIGHER COLLECTIVE POWER, to give us a prospect of Nature, even in these her *subordinate Wholes*, much more in that *comprehensive Whole*, whose Sympathy is universal, and of which these smaller Wholes are all no more than Parts.

But no where is this *collecting*, and (if I may be allowed the expression) this *unifying Power* more conspicuous, than in the subjects of PURE TRUTH. By virtue of this power the Mind views *One general Idea*, in *many Individuals*; *One Proposition*, in *many general Ideas*; *One Syllogism* in *many Propositions*; till at length, by properly repeating and connecting Syllogism with Syllogism, it ascends into those bright and steady regions of SCIENCE.

*Quas neque concutunt venti, neque nubila nimbis
Adspergunt, &c.* Lucr.

hensive than those of Sense; a Race of Perceptions, *each one of which may be found*

Even negative Truths and negative Conclusions cannot subsist, but by bringing Terms and Propositions together, so necessary is this UNITING Power to every Species of KNOWLEDGE. See p. 3, 250.

He that would better comprehend the distinction between SENSITIVE PERCEPTION, and INTELLECTIVE, may observe that, when a Truth is spoken, it is *heard* by our Ears, and *understood* by our Minds. That these two Acts are different, is plain, from the example of such as *hear* the sounds, without *knowing* the language. But to show their difference still stronger, let us suppose them to concur in the same Man, who shall both *hear* and *understand* the Truth proposed. Let the Truth be for example, *The Angles of a Triangle are equal to two right Angles.* That this is ONE Truth, and not two or many Truths, I believe none will deny. Let me ask then, in what manner does this Truth become perceptible (if at all) to SENSATION?—The Answer is obvious; it is by successive portions of little and little at a Time. When the first Word is *present*, all the subsequent are *absent*; when the last Word is *present*, all the previous are *absent*; when any of the middle Words are *present*, then are there some *absent*, as well of one sort as the other. No more exists at once

*intire and whole in the separate individuals
of an infinite and fleeting Multitude, with-*

than a single Syllable, and the Remainder as much *is not* (to Sensation at least) as tho' it never had been, or never was to be. And so much for the perception of SENSE, than which we see nothing can be more *dissipated, fleeting, and detached*.—And is that of the Mind similar?—Admit it, and what follows?—it follows, that *one* Mind would no more recognize *one* Truth, by recognising its Terms *successively and apart*, than *many* distant Minds would recognise it, were it distributed among them, a different part to each. The case is, every TRUTH is ONE, tho' its TERMS are MANY. It is in no respect true, *by parts at a time*, but it is true of necessity at once, and in an instant.—What Powers therefore recognise this ONENESS or UNITY?—Where even does it reside, or what makes it?—Shall we answer with the Stagirite, Τὸ δὲ ΕΝ ΠΟΙΟΥΝ τέρο δὲ ΝΟΥΣ ἔκατον—If this be allowed, it should seem, where SENSATION and INTELLECTION appear to concur, that Sensation was of MANY, Intellection was of ONE; that Sensation was *temporary, divisible, and successive*; Intellection, *instantaneous, indivisible, and at once*.

If we consider the Radii of a Circle, we shall find at the Circumference that they are MANY; at the Centre that they are ONE. Let us then suppose SENSE and MIND to view the same Radii, only let Sense view them

out departing from the unity and permanence of its own nature.

at the *Circumference*; Mind at the *Center*; and hence we may conceive, how these Powers differ, even where they jointly appear to operate in perception of the same object.

There is ANOTHER ACT OF THE MIND, the very reverse of that here mentioned; an Act, by which it perceives not *one in many*, but *MANY IN ONE*. This is that *mental Separation*, of which we have given some account in the first Chapter of this Book; that Resolution or Analysis which enables us to *investigate the Causes, and Principles, and Elements of things*. It is by Virtue of this, that we are enabled to abstract any particular Attribute, and make it *by itself* the Subject of Philosophical Contemplation. Were it not for this, it would be difficult for *particular Sciences* to exist; because otherwise they would be as much blended, as the several Attributes of sensible Substances. How, for example, could there be such a Science as *Optics*, were we necessitated to contemplate *Colour concreted with Figure*, two Attributes which the Eye can never view, but associated? I mention not a multitude of other sensible qualities, some of which still present themselves, whenever we look on any coloured Body.

AND thus we see the *Process by which we arrive at GENERAL IDEAS*; for the

Those two noble Sciences, ARITHMETIC and GEOMETRY, would have no Basis to stand on, were it not for this *separative Power*. They are both conversant about QUANTITY; *Geometry* about CONTINUOUS Quantity, *Arithmetick*, about DISCRETE. EXTENSION is essential to *continuous Quantity*, MONADS, or UNITS, to *Discrete*. By separating from the infinite Individuals, with which we are surrounded, those infinite accidents, by which they are all *diversified*, we leave nothing but those SIMPLE and PERFECTLY SIMILAR UNITS, which being combined make NUMBER, and are the Subject of ARITHMETIC.— Again, by separating from *Body* every possible subordinate Accident, and leaving it nothing but its *triple Extension of Length, Breadth, and Thickness* (of which were it to be deprived, it would be *Body* no longer) we arrive at that pure and unmixed MAGNITUDE, the contemplation of whose properties makes the Science of *Geometry*.

By the same *analytical* or *separate* Power, we investigate DEFINITIONS of all kinds, each one of which is a *developed Word*, as the same Word is an *undevloped Definition*.

To conclude—IN COMPOSITION AND DIVISION CONSISTS THE WHOLE OF SCIENCE: COMPOSITION MAKING

Perceptions here mentioned are in fact no other. In these too we perceive the objects of SCIENCE and REAL KNOWLEDGE, which can by no means be, but *of that which is general, and definite, and fixt.*^(*) Here too even *Individuals*, how-

AFFIRMATIVE TRUTH, AND SHewing US THINGS UNDER THEIR SIMILARITIES AND IDENTITIES; DIVISION MAKING NEGATIVE TRUTH, AND PRESENTING THEM TO US UNDER THEIR DISSIMILARITIES AND DIVERSITIES.

And here, by the way, there occurs a Question.—If all Wisdom be Science, and it be the business of Science as well to *compound* as to *separate*, may we not say that those Philosophers took *Half* of Wisdom for the *Whole*, who distinguished it from Wit, as if Wisdom only *separated*, and Wit only *brought together*?—Yet so held the Philosopher of Malmesbury, and the Author of the *Essay on the Human Understanding*.

(*) The very Etymologies of the Words ΕΠΙΣΤΗΜΗ, SCIENTIA, and UNDERSTANDING, may serve in some degree to shew the nature of these Faculties, as well as of those Beings, their true and proper Objects. ΕΠΙΣΤΗΜΗ ὠνόμαται, διὰ τὸ ΕΠΙ ΣΤΑΣΙΝ ἡ δρον· τῶν πραγμάτων

ever of themselves unknowable, become objects of Knowledge, as far as their

ἄγειν ἡμᾶς τῆς ἀοριτίας οὐ μεταβολῆς τῶν ἐπὶ μέρες ἀπάγεσσα· η γὰρ ἐπιεήμη περὶ τὰ καθόλε οὐ ἀμετάπτωτα καραγίνεται. SCIENCE (ΕΠΙΣΤΗΜΗ) has its name from bringing us (ΕΠΙΣΤΑΣΙΝ) to some STOP and BOUNDARY of things, taking us away from the unbounded nature and mutability of Particulars; for it is conversant about Subjects, that are general, and invariable. Niceph. Blem. Epit. Logic. p. 21.

This Etymology given by *Blemmides*, and long before him adopted by the *Peripatetics*, came originally from *Plato*, as may be seen in the following account of it from his *Cratylus*. In this Dialogue *Socrates*, having first (according to the *Heracitean Philosophy*, which *Cratylus* favoured) etymologized a multitude of Words with a view to that *Flow* and *unceasing Mutation*, supposed by *Heracitus* to run thro' all things, at length changes his System, and begins to etymologize from another, which supposed something in nature to be *permanent* and *fixed*. On this principle he thus proceeds Σκοπῶμεν δή, οὐκ αὐτῶν ἀναλαβόντες πρῶτον μὲν τὸ δόνομα τὴν ΕΠΙΣΤΗΜΗΝ, ὡς ἀμφιβόλου, έτι, οὐ μᾶλλον ἔοικε σημαῖνον τι δτι ΙΣΤΗΣΙΝ ἡμῶν ΕΠΙ τοῖς πράγμασι τὴν ψυχὴν, η δτι συμπεριφέρεται. Let us consider, then (says he) some of the very Words already examined; and in the first place, the Word

nature will permit. For then only may *any Particular* be said to be known, when by asserting it to be *a Man*, or *an Animal*,

SCIENCE; *how disputable is this* (as to its former Etymology) *how much more naturally does it appear to signify, that IT STOPS THE SOUL AT THINGS, than that it is carried about with them.* Plat. Cratyl. p. 437. Edit. Serr.

The disputable Etymology, to which he here alludes, was a strange one of his own making in the former part of the Dialogue, adapted to the flowing System of Heraclitus there mentioned. According to this notion, he had derived ΕΠΙΣΤΗΜΗ from ἐπεσθαι and μένειν, as if it *kept along with things, by perpetually following them in their motions.* See *Plato* as before, p. 412.

As to SCIENTIA, we are indebted to Scaliger for the following ingenious etymology. RATIOCINATIO motus quidam est: SCIENTIA, quies: unde et nomen, tum apud Graecos, tum etiam nostrum. Παρὰ τὸ ΕΠΙ ΙΣΤΑΣΘΑΙ, ΕΠΙΣΤΗΜΗ. Sistitur enim mentis agitatio, et sit species in animo. Sic Latinum SCIENTIA, δὲ γίνεται ΣΧΕΣΙΣ ΤΟΥ ΟΝΤΟΣ. Nam Latini, quod nomen entis simplex ab usu abieccerunt atque repudiarunt, omnibus activis participiis idem adjunxerunt. Audiens, ἀκέων ὄν. Scienz, σχῶν ὄν. Scal. in Theophr. de Causis Plant. Lib. I. p. 17.

The English Word, UNDERSTANDING, means not so

or the like, we refer it to some such *comprehensive*, or *general Idea*.

properly *Knowledge* as that *Faculty of the Soul*, where Knowledge resides. Why may we not then imagine, that the framers of this Word intended to represent it as a kind of firm *Basis*, on which the fair Structure of Sciences was to rest, and which was supposed to STAND UNDER them, as their immovable Support.

Whatever may be said of these Etymologies, whether they are true or false, they at least prove their Authors to have considered SCIENCE and UNDERSTANDING, not as fleeting powers of Perception, like *Sense*, but rather as steady, permanent, and durable COMPREHENSIONS.—But if so, we must somewhere or other find for them certain steady, permanent, and durable OBJECTS; since if PERCEPTION OF ANY KIND BE DIFFERENT FROM THE THING PERCEIVED (whether it perceive straight as crooked, or crooked as straight; the moving as fixed, or the fixed as moving) SUCH PERCEPTION MUST OF NECESSITY BE ERRONEOUS AND FALSE. The following passage from a Greek Platonic (whom we shall quote again hereafter) seems on the present occasion not without its weight—*Εἰ δὲ γνῶσις ἀκριβετέρα τῆς αἰσθήσεως, εἴη δὲ γνῶσις ἀληθετέρα τῶν αἰσθητῶν.* If there be a KNOWLEDGE more accurate than SENSATION there must be certain

Now it is of these COMPREHENSIVE and PERMANENT IDEAS, THE GENUINE PERCEPTIONS OF PURE MIND, that WORDS of all Languages, however different, are the SYMBOLS. And hence it is, that *as the PERCEPTIONS include, so do these their SYMBOLS express, not this or that set of Particulars only, but all indifferently, as they happen to occur.* Were,

OBJECTS of such knowledge MORE TRUE THAN OBJECTS OF SENSE.

The following, then, are Questions worth considering.—*What these Objects are?—Where they reside?—And how they are to be discovered?*—Not by experimental Philosophy it is plain; for that meddles with nothing, but what is tangible, corporeal, and mutable—nor even by the more refined and rational speculation of Mathematics; for this, at its very commencement, takes such Objects for granted. We can only add, that *if they reside in our own MINDS* (and who, that has never looked there, can affirm they do not?) then will the advice of the Satirist be no ways improper,

—NEC TE QUESIVERIS EXTRA.

Pers.

therefore, the Inhabitants of *Salisbury* to be transferred to *York*, tho' new particular objects would appear on every side, they would still no more want a new Language to explain themselves, than they would want new Minds to comprehend what they beheld. All, indeed, that they would want, would be the *local proper Names*; which Names, as we have said already,* are hardly a part of Language, but must equally be learnt both by learned and unlearned, as often as they change the place of their abode.

IT is upon the same principles we may perceive the reason, why the dead Languages (as we call them) are *now* intelligible; and why the Language of *modern England* is able to describe *antient Rome*; and that of *antient Rome* to describe

* Sup. p. 345, 346.

modern England.⁽ⁿ⁾ But of these matters we have spoken before.

§ 2. AND now having viewed *the Process, by which we acquire general Ideas*, let us begin anew from other Principles, and try to discover (if we can prove so fortunate) *whence it is that these ideas originally come*. If we can succeed here, we may discern perhaps, *what kind of Beings they are*, for this at present appears somewhat obscure.

⁽ⁿ⁾ As far as *Human Nature*, and the *primary Genera* both of *Substance* and *Accident* are the *same* in all places, and have been so thro' all ages; so far all *Languages* share one common *IDENTITY*. As far as *peculiar species of Substance* occur in different regions; and much more, as far as the *positive Institutions of religious and civil Polities* are *every where different*; so far each *Language* has its peculiar *DIVERSITY*. To the Causes of *Diversity* here mentioned, may be added the *distinguishing Character and Genius of every Nation*, concerning which we shall speak hereafter.

LET us suppose any man to look for the first time upon *some work of Art*, as for example upon a Clock; and having sufficiently viewed it, at length to depart. Would he not retain, when absent, an Idea of what he had seen?—And what is it, *to retain such Idea?*—*It is to have a FORM INTERNAL correspondent to THE EXTERNAL;* only with this difference, that the *Internal Form is devoid of the Matter; the External is united with it;* being seen in the metal, the wood, and the like.

Now if we suppose this Spectator to view *many such Machines*, and not simply to view, but to consider every part of them, so as to comprehend how these parts all operate to one End, he might be then said to possess a kind of INTELLIGIBLE FORM, by which he would not only understand, and know the Clocks, which he had seen *already*, but every Work also of

like Sort, which he might see *hereafter*.—Should it be asked, “*which of these Forms is prior, the External and Sensible, or the Internal and Intelligible;*” the Answer is obvious, that *the prior is the Sensible.*

THUS then we see, THERE ARE INTELLIGIBLE FORMS WHICH TO THE SENSIBLE ARE SUBSEQUENT.

BUT farther still—if these Machines be allowed the Work, *not of Chance*, but of *an Artist*, they must be the Work of one, who *knew what he was about*. And what is it, *to work and know what one is about?*—*It is to have an Idea of what one is doing; to possess a FORM INTERNAL, corresponding to the EXTERNAL, to which external it serves for an EXEMPLAR or ARCHETYPE.*

HERE then we have AN INTELLIGIBLE FORM, WHICH IS PRIOR TO THE SEN-

SIBLE FORM ; which, being truly prior as well in dignity as in time, can no more become subsequent, than Cause can to Effect.

THUS then, with respect to Works of ART, we may perceive, if we attend, A TRIPLE ORDER OF FORMS ; one Order, intelligible and previous to these Works ; a second ORDER, sensible and concomitant ; and a third, again, intelligible and subsequent. After the first of these Orders the Maker may be said to *work* ; thro' the Second, the Works themselves *exist*, and are what they are ; and in the third they become *recognized*, as mere Objects of Contemplation. To make these Forms by different Names more easy to be understood ; the first may be called THE MAKER'S FORM ; the second, that of THE SUBJECT ; and the third, that of THE CONTEMPLATOR.

LET us pass from hence to Works of NATURE. Let us imagine ourselves view-

ing some diversified Prospect ; "a Plain,
" for example, spacious and fertile; a
" river winding thro' it; by the banks of
" that river, men walking, and cattle
" grazing; the view terminated with dis-
" tant hills, some craggy, and some
" covered with wood." Here it is plain
we have plenty of FORMS NATURAL. And
could any one quit so fair a Sight, and
retain no traces of what he had beheld?—
And what is it, *to retain traces of what one
has beheld?*—It is to have certain FORMS
INTERNAL correspondent to the EXTER-
NAL, and resembling them in every thing,
except the being merged in Matter. And
thus, thro' the same retentive and collective
Powers, the Mind becomes fraught with
Forms natural, as before with *Forms arti-
ficial*.—Should it be asked, "*which of these
natural Forms are prior, the External
ones viewed by the Senses, or the Internal
existing in the Mind?*" the Answer is
obvious, that *the prior are the External*.

THUS therefore in NATURE, as well as in ART, THERE ARE INTELLIGIBLE FORMS, WHICH TO THE SENSIBLE ARE SUBSEQUENT. Hence then we see the meaning of that noted School Axiom, *Nil est in INTELLECTU quod non prius fuit in SENSU*; an Axiom, which we must own to be so far allowable, as it respects the Ideas of a mere Contemplator.

BUT to proceed somewhat farther—Are *natural* Productions made BY CHANCE, or BY DESIGN?—Let us admit *by Design*, not to lengthen our inquiry. They are certainly* more exquisite than *any* Works of ART, and yet *these* we cannot bring ourselves to suppose made by *Chance*.—Admit it, and what follows?—*We must of necessity admit a MIND also, because DESIGN implies MIND, wherever it is to be.*

* *Arist. de Part. Animal. L. I. c. 1.*

found. Allowing therefore this, what do we mean by the Term, MIND?—We mean *something, which, when it acts, knows what it is going to do; something stored with Ideas of its intended Works, agreeably to which Ideas those Works are fashioned.*

THAT such EXEMPLARS, PATTERNS, FORMS, IDEAS (call them as you please), must *of necessity* be, requires no proving, but follows of course, if we admit the Cause of Nature to be a MIND, as above mentioned. For take away these, and *what a Mind* do we leave without them! CHANCE surely is as knowing, as MIND WITHOUT IDEAS; or rather MIND WITHOUT IDEAS is no less blind than CHANCE.

THE Nature of these IDEAS is not difficult to explain, if we once come to allow a possibility of their Existence. That they are exquisitely *beautiful, various, and orderly,* is evident from the exquisite

Beauty, Variety, and Order, seen in natural Substances, which are but their *Copies* or *Pictures*. That they are *mental* is plain, as they are of the *Essence of Mind*, and consequently no Objects to any of the *Senses*, nor therefore circumscribed either by *Time* or *Place*.

HERE, then, on this System, we have plenty of FORMS INTELLIGIBLE, WHICH ARE TRULY PREVIOUS TO ALL FORMS SENSIBLE. Here too we see that NATURE is not defective in her TRIPLE ORDER, having (like Art) her FORMS PREVIOUS, HER CONCOMITANT, and HER SUBSEQUENT.⁽¹⁾

⁽¹⁾ Simplicius, in his commentary upon the Predicaments, calls the first Order of these intelligible Forms, τὰ πρὸ τῆς μεθέξεως, those previous to Participation, and at other times, η ἐξηρημένη κοινότης, the transcendent Universality or Sameness; the second Order he calls τὰ ἐν μεθέξει, those which exist in Participation, that is, those merged in Matter; and at other times, he calls them

That the previous may be justly so called is plain, because they are *essentially*

η κατατεταγμένη κοινότης, the subordinate Universality or Sameness; lastly, of the third Order he says, that they have no independent existence of their own, but that—ημεῖς ἀφελόντες αὐτὰ ἐν ταῖς ἡμετέραις ἐννοίαις, καθ' ἑαυτὰ ὑπετήσαμεν, we ourselves abstracting them in our own Imaginations, have given them by such abstraction an existence as of themselves. Simp. in Prædic. p. 17. In another place he says, in a language somewhat mysterious, yet still conformable to the same doctrine—*Μήποτε ἐν τριττὸν ληπτέον τὸ κοινὸν, τὸ μὲν ἔξηρημένον τῶν καθ' ἕκατα, ἢ αἰτιον τῆς ἐν αὐτοῖς κοινότητος, κατὰ τὴν μίαν ἑαυτῷ φύσιν, ὕσπερ ἢ τῆς διαφορότητος κατὰ τὴν πολυειδῆ προληψιν—δεύτερον δὲ ἐστι τὸ κοινὸν, τὸ ἀπὸ κοινῷ αἰτίᾳ τοῖς διαφόροις εἰδεσιν ἐνδιδόμενον, ἢ ἐνυπάρχον αὐτοῖς—τρίτον δὲ, τὸ ἐν ταῖς ἡμετέραις διανοίαις ἐξ ἀφαιρέσεως ὑφιστάμενον, ὑστερογενὲς δι—Perhaps therefore we must admit a TRIPLE ORDER OF WHAT IS UNIVERSAL AND THE SAME; that of the first Order, transcendent and superior to Particulars, which thro' its uniform nature is the cause of that Sameness existing in them, as thro' its multi-form pre-conception it is the cause of their Diversity—that of the second Order, what is infused from the first universal Cause into the various Species of Beings, and which has its existence in those several Species—that of the third Order, what subsists by abstraction in our own Understandings, being of subsequent origin to the other two. Ibid. p. 21,*

prior to all things else. The whole visible World exhibits nothing more,

To *Simplicius* we shall add the two following Quotations from *Ammonius* and *Nicephorus Blemmides*, which we have ventured to transcribe, without regard to their uncommon length, as they so fully establish the Doctrine here advanced, and the works of these authors are not easy to be procured.

Ἐννοείσθω τοίνυν δακτύλιος τις ἐκτέπωμα ἔχων, εἰ τύχοι, Ἀχιλλέως, ἡ κηρία πολλὰ παρακείμενα· δὸς δακτύλιος σφραγίζεται τὸς κηρὸς πάντας· ὑπερον δὲ τις εἰσελθὼν ἡ θεασάμενος τὰ κηρία, ἐπιτήσας δηι πάντα ἐξ ἐνός εἰσιν ἐκτυπώματος, ἔχετω παρ' αὐτῷ τὸ ἐκτέπωμα τῇ διανοίᾳ. Ἡ τοίνυν σφραγὶς ή ἐν τῷ δακτυλίῳ λέγεται ΠΡΟ ΤΩΝ ΠΟΛΛΩΝ εἶναι· ή δὲ ἐν τοῖς κηρίοις, ΕΝ ΤΟΙΣ ΠΟΛΛΟΙΣ· ή δὲ ἐν τῇ διανοίᾳ τῇ ἀπομαξαρένε, ΕΠΙ ΤΟΙΣ ΠΟΛΛΟΙΣ, ἡ ὑπερογενῆς. Τέτο δν ἐννοείσθω ἡ ἐπὶ τῶν γενῶν ἡ εἰδῶν· δὸς γὰρ Δημιεργὸς, ποιῶν πάντα, ἔχει παρ' ἑαυτῷ τὰ πάντων παραδείγματα· οἷον, ποιῶν ἀνθρωπον, ἔχει τὸ εἰδος παρ' ἑαυτῷ τῇ ἀνθρώπε, πρὸς δὲ ἀφορῶν, πάντας ποιεῖ. Εἰ δέ τις ἐνταίῃ λέγων, ὃς ἐκ εἰσὶ παρὰ τῷ Δημιεργῷ τὰ εἰδη, ἀκείτω ταῦτα, ως δὸς Δημιεργὸς δημιεργεῖ, ή εἰδὼς τὰ ὑπὸ αὐτῷ δημιεργόμενα, ή ὃς εἰδώς. Ἄλλ' εἰ μὲν μὴ εἰδὼς, ἀκεὶ ἀν δημιεργήσει. Τίς γὰρ, μελλων ποιήσει τὸ, ἀγνοεῖ δὲ μελλεῖ ποιεῖν; ἢ γὰρ,

than so many *passing Pictures* of these
immutable Archetypes. Nay thro' these

ώς ή φύσις, ἀλόγῳ δυνάμει ποιεῖ· (ὅθεν ἡ ποιεῖ ή φύσις, ὁκ ἐφιτάνεσσα γυναικῶς τῷ γιγνομένῳ) Εἰ δέ τι καθ' ξειν λογικὴν ποιεῖ, οὐδεποτε πάντως τὸ γιγνόμενον ὑπ' αὐτῷ. Εἰ τοίνυν μὴ χείρου, ἢ κατὰ ἄνθρωπον ὁ Θεὸς ποιεῖ, οὐδὲ τὸ ὑπ' αὐτῷ γιγνόμενον εἰ δὲ οὐδεν δ ποιεῖ αὐτόδι θηλον, ὡς ξειν ἐν τῷ Δημιουργῷ τὰ εἶδη. "Εσι δὲ τὸ εἶδος ἐν τῷ Δημιουργῷ ὡς δ ἐν τῷ δακτυλίῳ τύπος· ἡ λέγεται τέτο τὸ εἶδος ΠΡΟ ΤΩΝ ΠΟΛΛΩΝ ἡ χωριστὸν τῆς ὑλῆς. "Εσι δὲ τὸ εἶδος τῷ ἀνθρώπῳ ἐν τοῖς καθ' ξεινον ἀνθρώποις, ὡς τὰ ἐν τοῖς κηροῖς ἐκτυπώματα· ἡ λέγεται τὰ τοιάντα ΕΝ ΤΟΙΣ ΠΟΛΛΟΙΣ εἶναι, ἡ ἀχώριτα τῆς ὑλῆς. Θεασάμενοι δὲ τὰς κατὰ μέρος ἀνθρώπως δτι πάντες τὸ αὐτὸν εἶδος τῷ ἀνθρώπῳ ἔχοσιν (ώς ἐπὶ τῷ ὑπερον θλύβντος, ἡ θεασαμένες τὰ κηρία) ἀνεμάξαμεθα αὐτὸν ἐν τῇ διανοίᾳ· ἡ λέγεται τέτο ΕΠΙ ΤΟΙΣ ΠΟΛΛΟΙΣ, ἦγουν μετὰ τὰ πολλὰ, ἡ ὑπερογενές. *Intelligatur annulus, qui alicuius, utpote Achillis, imaginem insculptam habeat: multæ insuper ceræ sint, et ab annulo imprimantur: veniat deinde quispiam, videatque ceras omnes unius annuli impressione formatas, annulique impressionem in mente contineat: sigillum annulo insculptum, ANTE MULTA dicetur: in cerulis impressum, in MULTIS: quod vero in illius, qui illo venerat intelligentia remanserit; POST MULTA, et posterius genitum dicetur. Idem in generibus et formis intelligendum censeo;*

it attains even a Semblance of Immor-

etenim ille optimus procreator mundi Deus, omnium rerum formas, atque exempla habet apud se: ut si hominem efficere velit, in hominis formam, quam habet, intueatur, et ad illius exemplum cæteros faciat omnes. At si quis restiterit, dicatque rerum formas apud Creatorem non esse: quæso ut diligenter attendat: Opifex, quæ facit, vel cognoscit, vel ignorat: sed is, qui nesciet, nunquam quicquam fuciet: quis enim id facere aggreditur, quod facere ignorat? Neque enim facultate quoddam rationis experte aliquid aget, prout agil natura (ex quo conficitur, ut natura etiam agat, etsi quæ faciat non advertat): Si vero ratione quadam aliquid facit, quodcunque ab eo factum est omnino cognovit. Si igitur Deus non pejore ratione, quam homo, facit quid, quæ fecit cognovit: si cognovit quæ fecit, in ipso rerum formas esse perspicuum est. Formæ autem in opifice sunt perinde ac in annulo sigillum; hæcque forma ANTE MULTA, et avulsa a materiâ dicitur. Alqui hominis species in unoquoque homine est, quemadmodum etiam sigilla in ceris; et IN MULTIS, nec avulsa a materiâ dicitur. At cum singulos homines animo conspicimus, et eandem in unoquoque formam atque effigiem videmus, illa effigies in mente nostrâ insidens POST MULTA, et posterius genita dicetur: veluti in illo quoque dicebamus, qui multa sigilla in cerâ uno et eodem annulo impressa conspicerat. Ammon. in Porphyri. Introduct. p. 29. b.

Αἴγονται δὲ τὰ γένη ἢ τὰ εἶδη ΠΡΟ ΤΩΝ ΠΟΛΛΩΝ,

tality, and continues throughout ages to

ΕΝ ΤΟΙΣ ΠΟΛΛΟΙΣ, ΕΠΙ ΤΟΙΣ ΠΟΛΛΟΙΣ· οἷον ἐννοείσθω τι σφραγιστήριον, ἔχον ἢ ἐκτύπωμα τὸ τυχόν, ἢ ἡ κηρία πολλὰ μεταλαβέτω τῷ ἐκτυπώματος, καὶ τις ὑπ' ὅψιν ἀγαγέτω ταῦτα, μὴ προκατιδὼν μηδὲ δλως τὸ σφραγιστήριον· ἐώρακὼς δὲ τὰ ἐν οἷς τὸ ἐκτύπωμα, ἢ ἐπιτίσσας διτὶ πάντα τῷ αὐτῷ μετέχοσιν ἐκτυπώματος; ἢ τὰ δοκῆτα πολλὰ τῷ λόγῳ συναρθροῖσας εἰς ἐν ἔχετω τῷτο κατὰ διάνοιαν. Τὸ μὲν ὃν σφραγιστήριον τύπωμα λέγεται ΠΡΟ ΤΩΝ ΠΟΛΛΩΝ· τὸ δὲ ἐν τοῖς κηρίοις, ΕΝ ΤΟΙΣ ΠΟΛΛΟΙΣ· τὸ δὲ ἢξ αὐτῶν καταληφθὲν, ἢ κατὰ διάνοιαν ἀύλως ὑποτάν, ΕΠΙ ΤΟΙΣ ΠΟΛΛΟΙΣ. Οὕτως ὃν ἢ τὰ γένη ἢ τὰ εἶδη ΠΡΟ ΤΩΝ ΠΟΛΛΩΝ μὲν εἰσιν ἐν τῷ Δημιαργῷ, κατὰ τὰς ποιητικὰς λόγους ἐν τῷ Θεῷ γάρ οἱ ἐσιοποιοὶ λόγοι τῶν ὄντων ἐνιαίως προϋφεστήκασι, καθ' ἃς λόγος ὁ ὑπερέσιος τὰ δύτα πάντα ἢ προώρισε ἢ παρήγαγεν· ὑφηγηκέναι δὲ λέγονται τὰ γένη ἢ τὰ εἶδη ΕΝ ΤΟΙΣ ΠΟΛΛΟΙΣ, διότι ἐν τοῖς κατὰ μέρος ἀνθρώποις τὸ τῷ ἀνθρώπῳ εἶδος ἐστι, ἢ τοῖς κατὰ μέρος ἵπποις τὸ τῷ ἵππῳ εἶδος· ἐν ἀνθρώποις δὲ, ἢ ἵπποις, ἢ τοῖς ἄλλοις ζώοις τὸ γένος εὑρίσκεται τῶν τοιέτων εἰδῶν, δπερ ἐστὶ τὸ ζῶον· καὶν τοῖς ζώοις ὅμοι ἢ τοῖς ζωοφύτοις τὸ καθολικώτερον γένος, τὸ αἰσθητικὸν, ἐξετάζεται· συναχθέντων δὲ ἐτῶν φυτῶν, θεωρεῖται τὸ ἔμβυχον· εἰ δὲ σὺν τοῖς ἔμβυχοις ἔθελε πις ἐπισκοπεῖν ἢ τὰ ἄψυχα, τὸ σῶμα σύμπαν καρδιέται· συνδραμεσῶν δὲ ταῦτα εἰρημένοις τῶν ἀσωμάτων ἀτεῖτων, τὰ πρῶτον γένος φανεῖται ἢ γενικάτατον· ἢ τὰ

be SPECIFICALLY ONE, amid those infi-

μὲν ΕΝ ΤΟΙΣ ΠΟΛΛΟΙΣ ὑφέσηκε τὰ εἶδη ἢ τὰ γένη.
 Καταλαβὼν δὲ τις ἐκ τῶν κατὰ μέρος ἀνθρώπων τὴν
 αὐτῶν φύσιν, τὴν ἀνθρωπότητα, ἐκ δὲ τῶν κατὰ μέρος
 Ἰππων αὐτὴν τὴν ἵππότητα, ἢ ὅτα τὸν καθόλες ἀνθρωπὸν;
 ἢ τὸν καθόλες Ἰππὸν ἐπινόησας ἢ τὸ καθόλες ζῶν ἐκ τῶν
 καθίκατα τῷ λόγῳ συναγαγὼν ἢ τὸ καθόλες αἰσθητικὸν, ἢ
 τὸ καθόλες ἔμψυχον, ἢ τὸ καθόλες σῶμα, ἢ τὴν καθολε-
 κωτάτην δολανὴν ἐξ ἀπάντων συλλογισμάτου, δ τοιᾶτος ἐν
 τῇ ἑαυτῷ διανοίᾳ τὰ γένη ἢ τὰ εἶδη ἀνθλωπῶν ὑπέτησεν ΕΠΙ
 ΤΟΙΣ ΠΟΛΛΟΙΣ, τατέσι, μετὰ τὰ πολλὰ ἢ ὑπηρογενῶς.
*Genera vero et Species dicuntur esse ANTE MULTA, IN
 MULTIS, POST MULTA.* Ut puta, intelligatur sigillum,
 quoniam *figuram habens, ex quo multæ cereæ ejusdem
 figura sint participes, et in medium aliquis has proferat,
 nequaquam præviso sigillo.* Cum autem vidisset eas cereæ
 in quibus figura exprimitur, et animadverteret omnes
 eandem figuram participare, et quæ videbantur multæ,
 ratione in unum coegisset, hoc in mente teneat. Nempe
 sigillum dicitur esse species ANTE MULTA; illa vero in
 cereis, IN MULTIS; quæ vero ab iis denumitur, et in mente
 immaterialiter subestit, POST MULTA. Sio igitur et
 Genera et Species ANTE MULTA in Creatore sunt, secundum
 rationes efficientes. In Deo enim rerum effectrices rationes
 una et simpliciter præ-existent; secundum quas rationes
 ille supra-substantialis omnes res et prædestinavit et pro-
 duxit. Existere autem dicuntur Genera et Species IN
 MULTIS, quoniam in singulis hominibus hominis Species, et

nite particular changes, that beset it every moment.¹²

in singulis equis equi Species est. In hominibus æque ac in equis et aliis animalibus Genus invenitur harum specierum, quod est animal. In animalibus etiam una cum Zoophytis magis universale Genus, nempe sensitivum exquiritur. Additis vero plantis, spectatur Genus animatum. Si verò una cum animatis quisquam velit perscrutari etiam inanima, totum Corpus perspicet. Cum autem entia incorporea conjuncta fuerint iis modo tractatis, apparebit primum et generalissimum Genus. Atque ita quidem IN MULTIS subsistunt Genera et Species. Comprehēdens vero quisquam ex singulis hominibus naturam ipsam humanam, et ex singulis equis ipsam equinam, atque ita universalem hominem et universalem equum considerans, et universale animal ex singulis ratione colligens, et universale sensitivum, et universale animatum et universale corpus; et maxime universale ens ex omnibus colligens, hic, inquam, in subiecto Genera et Species immaterialiter constituit ΕΠΙ ΤΟΙΣ ΠΟΛΛΟΙΣ, hoc est, POST MULTA, et posterius genita. Niceph. Blem. Log. Epit. p. 62. Vid. etiam Alcin. in Platonic. Philosop. Introduc. C. IX. X.

¹² The following elegant lines of Virgil are worth attending to, tho' applied to no higher a subject than Bees.

*Ergo ipeas quamvis angusti terminus ævi
Excipiat; (neque enim plus septima ducitur ætas)
AT GENUS IMMORTALE MANET.—G. IV.*

MAY we be allowed then to credit those speculative Men, who tell us, “*it is in these permanent and comprehensive Forms that the Deity views at once, without looking abroad, all possible productions,*

The same *Immortality*, that is, the *Immortality of the Kind*, may be seen in all *perishable* substances, whether animal or inanimate; for tho’ *individuals perish*, the *several kinds still remain*. And hence, if we take *TIME*, as denoting the *system of things temporary*, we may collect the meaning of that passage in the *Timæus*, where the philosopher describes *TIME* to be—μένοντος οἰώνος ἐν ἐνὶ καὶ ἀριθμὸν ἔστων οἰώνιον εἰκόνα. *Eternitatis in uno permanentis Imaginem quandam, certis numerorum articulis prægredientem.* Plat. V. III. p. 37. Edit. Serran.

We have subjoined the following extract from *Boethius*, to serve as a commentary on this description of *TIME*.—
ÆTERNITAS igitur est, interminabilis vitæ tota simili et perfecta possessio. Quod ex collatione temporalium clarissimum liquet. Nam quidquid vivit in TEMPORE, id præsens à præteritis in futura procedit: nihilque est in tempore ita constitutum, quod totum vitæ suæ spatiū pariter possit amplecti; sed crastinum quidem nondum apprehendit, hesternum vero jam perdidit. In hodiernā quoque vita non amplius vivitur, quam in illo mobili transitorioque momento.

*" both present, past, and future—that this
great and stupendous View is but a View
of himself, where all things lie enveloped
in their Principles and Exemplars, as
being essential to the fulness of his univer-
sal Intellection?"—If so, it will be
proper that we invert the Axiom before*

*Quod igitur Temporis patitur conditionem, licet illud, sicut
de mundo censuit Aristoteles, nec experit unquam esse, nec
desinat, vitaque ejus cum temporis infinite tendatur, non-
dum tamen tale est, ut aeternum esse jure credatur. Non
enim totum simul infinite licet vita spatiū comprehendit,
aliquæ complectitur, sed futura nondum transacta jam non
habet. Quod igitur interminabilis vita plenitudinem totam
pariter comprehendit, ac possidet, cui neque futuri quidquam
abui, nec praeteriū fluxerit, id ETERNUM esse jure perhibe-
tur: idque necesse est, et sui compos præsens sibi semper
assistere, et infinitatem mobilis temporis habere presentem.
Unde quidam non rectè, qui cum audiunt vieum Platoni,
mundum hunc nec habuisse initium, nec habituum esse de-
fectum, hoc modo conditori conditum mundum fieri co-aet-
num putant. Aliud est enim PER INTERMINABILEM DUCI
VITAM, (quod Mundo Plato tribuit) aliud INTERMINABI-
LIS VITA TOTAM PARITER COMPLEXAM ESSE PRÆSEN-
TIAM, quod Divinæ Mantis proprium esse manifestum est,*

mentioned. We must now say.—*Nil est in SENSU, quod non prius fuit in INTELLECTU.* For though the contrary may be true with respect to Knowledge merely *human*, yet never can it be true with respect to Knowledge universally, unless we give Precedence to ATOMS and LIFE-

Neque enim Deus conditis rebus antiquior videri debet temporis quantitate, sed simplicis potius proprietate naturæ. HUNC ENIM VITÆ IMMOBILIS PRÆSENTARIUM STATUM, INFINITUS ILLE TEMPORALIUM ERRUM MOTUS IMITATUR; cumque eum effingere, atque æquare non possit, ex immobilitate deficit in motum; ex simplicitate præsentiae decrescit in infinitam futuri ac præteriti quantitatem; et, cum totam pariter vitæ suæ plenitudinem nequeat possidere, hoc ipso, quod aliquo modo nunquam esse desinit, illud, quod implere atque exprimere non potest, aliquatenus videtur æmulari, alligans se ad qualemcumque præsentiam hujus exigui volucrisque momenti: quæ, quoniam MANENTIS ILLIUS PRÆSENTIAE QUANDAM GESTAT IMAGINEM, quibuscumque contigerit, id præstat, ut ESSE videantur. Quoniam vero manere non potuit, infinitum Temporis iter arripuit; eoque modo factum est, ut CONTINUARET VITAM EUNDO, cuius plenitudinem complecti non valuit PERMANENDO. Itaque, &c. De Consolat. Philosoph. L. V.

LESS BODY, making MIND, *among other things, to be struck out by a lucky Concourse.*

§ 3. It is far from the design of this Treatise, to insinuate that Atheism is the Hypothesis of our latter Metaphysicians. But yet it is somewhat remarkable, in their several Systems, how readily they admit of the aboye *Precedence.*

FOR mark the Order of things, according to *their* account of them.—First comes that huge Body *the sensible World.* Then this and its Attributes beget *sensible Ideas.* Then out of sensible Ideas, by a kind of lopping and pruning, are made *Ideas intelligible, whether specific or general.* Thus should they admit that MIND was coeval with BODY, yet *till BODY gave it Ideas,* and awakened its dormant Powers, it could at best have been nothing more,

than a sort of dead Capacity ; for INNATE IDEAS it could not possibly have any.

AT another time we hear of *Bodies so exceedingly fine*, that their very *Exility* makes them susceptible of *sensation* and *knowledge* ; as if they shrunk into *Intellect* by their exquisite subtlety, which rendered them too delicate to be *Bodies* any longer. It is to this notion we owe many curious inventions, such as *subtle Æther*, *animal Spirits*, *nervous Ducts*, *Vibrations*, and the like ; Terins, which MODERN PHILOSOPHY, upon parting with *occult Qualities*, has found expedient to provide itself, to supply their place.

BUT the *intellectual Scheme*, which never forgets Deity, postpones every thing *corporeal* to the *primary mental Cause*. It is here it looks for the origin of *intelligible Ideas*, even of those, which exist in *human Capacities*. For tho' *sensible Objects* may

be the destined medium, to *awaken* the dormant Energies of *Man's Understanding*, yet are those Energies themselves no more contained in *Sense*, than the Explosion of a Cannon, in the Spark which gave it fire.⁽⁶⁾

⁽⁶⁾ The following Note is taken from a Manuscript Commentary of the *Platonic Olympiodorus* (quoted before, p. 371), upon the *Phædo* of *Plato*; which, tho' perhaps some may object to from inclining to the Doctrine of *Platonic Reminiscence*, yet it certainly gives a better account how far the *Senses* assist in the acquisition of *Science*, than we can find given by vulgar Philosophers.

Οὐδέποτε γὰρ τὰ χείρων η δεύτερα ἀρχαὶ οὐτίσι εἰσὶ τῶν κρειττόνων· εἰ δὲ δεῖ η ταῖς ἐγκυκλοῖς ἔξηγήσεσι πείθεσθαι, η ἀρχὴν εἰπεῖν τὴν αἰσθησιν τῆς ἐπιείκης, λέξομεν αὐτὴν ἀρχὴν ἐχ ὡς ποιητικὴν, ἀλλ' ὡς ἐρεθίζεσσαν τὴν ἡμετέραν ψυχὴν εἰς ἀνάμνησιν τῶν καθόλε—κατὰ ταῦτην δὲ τὴν ἐννοίαν εἴρηται η τὸ ἐν Τιμαίῳ, ὅτι δι' ὕψεως η ἀκοῆς τὸ τῆς φιλοσοφίας ἐπορίσαμεθα γένος, διότι ἐκ τῶν αἰσθητῶν εἰς ἀνάμνησιν ἀφικνέμεθα. *Those things, which are inferior and secondary, are by no means the Principles or Causes of the more excellent: and though we admit the common interpretations, and allow SENSE to be a Principle of SCIENCE, we must, however, call it a Principle, not as if it was the efficient Cause, but as it rouses*

IN short, ALL MINDS, that are, are SIMILAR and CONGENIAL; and so too

our Soul to the Recollection of general Ideas—According to the same way of thinking is it said in the Timæus, that through the Sight and Hearing we acquire to ourselves Philosophy, because we pass from Objects of Sense to REMINISCENCE or RECOLLECTION.

And in another passage he observes—'Επειδὴ γὰρ πάμμορφον ἄγαλμά ἔτιν ἡ ψυχὴ, πάντων τῶν ὄντων ἔχεσσα λόγικη, ἐριθίζομένη ὑπὸ τῶν αἰσθητῶν ἀναμιμνήσκεται ὃν ἔνδον ἔχει λόγων, οὐ τέττας προβάλλεται. For in as much as the SOUL, by containing the Principles of all beings, is a sort of OMNIFORM REPRESENTATION or EXEMPLAR; when it is roused by objects of Sense, it recollects those Principles, which it contains within, and brings them forth.

Georgius Gemistus, otherwise called *Pletho*, writes upon the same subject in the following manner. Τὴν ψυχὴν φασὶν οἱ τὰ εἴδη τιθέμενοι ἀναλαμβάνεσσαν ἔσγε ἐπιστήμην τὸς ἐν τοῖς αἰσθητοῖς λόγως, ἀκριβέστερον αὐτὸς ἔχοντας δὲ τελεώτερον ἐν ἑαυτῷ ἰσχειν, ἢ ἐν τοῖς αἰσθητοῖς ἔχεσι. Τὸ δὲ τελεώτερον τέτο δὲ ἀκριβέστερον ἐκ ἀν ἀπὸ τῶν αἰσθητῶν ἰσχειν τὴν ψυχὴν, διγε μὴ ἵτιν ἐν αὐτοῖς. Οὐ δὲ αὐ μηδαμῷ ἀλλόθι δυ αὐτὴν ἐξ αὐτῆς διανοεῖσθαι· ἐ δὲ γὰρ πεφυκέναι τὴν ψυχὴν μηδαμῇ ὅν, τι διανοεῖσθαι τὰς γὰρ ψευδεῖς τῶν δοξῶν ἐχὶ μὴ ὄντων ἀλλ' ὄντων μεν, ἀλλων δὲ κατ' ἄλλων εἶναι συνθέσεις τινὰς, ἐ κατὰ τὸ

are their *Ideas*, or *intelligible Forms*.
Were it otherwise, there could be no in-

δρθδν γινομένας. Λείπεσθαι δὲ ἀφ' ἐτέρας τινὸς φύσεως πολλῷ ἔτι κρέπτονός τε ἡ τελεωτέρας ἀφίκειν τῇ ψυχῇ τὸ τελεώτερον τέτο τῶν ἐν τοῖς αἰσθητοῖς λόγων. Those who suppose IDEAL FORMS, say that the Soul, when she assumes, for the purposes of Science, those proportions, which exist in sensible objects, possesses them with a superior accuracy and perfection, than that to which they attain in those sensible objects. Now this superior Perfection or Accuracy the soul cannot have from sensible objects, as it is in fact not in them; nor yet can she conceive it herself as from herself, without its having existence anywhere else. For the Soul is not formed so as to conceive that, which has existence nowhere, since even such opinions, as are false, are all of them compositions, irregularly formed, not of mere Non-Beings, but of various real beings, one with another. It remains therefore that this perfection, which is superior to the proportions existing in sensible objects, must descend to the Soul from SOME OTHER NATURE, WHICH IS BY MANY DEGREES MORE EXCELLENT AND PERFECT. Pleth. de Aristotel. et Platonic. Philosoph. Diff. Edit. Paris 1541.

The ΛΟΓΟΙ or PROPORTIONS, of which Gemistius here speaks, mean not only those relative Proportions of Equality and Inequality, which exist in quantity (such as double, sesquialter, &c.) but in a larger sense, they

tercourse between Man and Man, or (what is more important) between Man and God.

may be extended to mathematical *Lines*, *Angles*, *Figures*, &c. of all which Λόγοι or *Proportions*, tho' we possess in the *Mind* the most clear and precise Ideas, yet it may be justly questioned whether any one of them ever existed in the *sensible* world.

To these two authors we may add *Boethius*, who, after having enumerated many acts of the MIND or INTELLECT, wholly distinct from *Sensation*, and independent of it, at length concludes,

*Hec est efficiens magis,
Longè causa potentior,
Quam quæ materiæ modo
Impressas patitur notas.
Precedit tamen excitans,
Ac vires animi movens,
Vivo in corpore passio.
Cùm vel lux oculos ferit,
Vel vox auribus instrepit;
Tum MENTIS VIGOR excitus,
QUAS INTUS SPECIES TENET,
Ad motus simileis vocans,
Notis applicat exteris,
INTRORSUMQUE RECONDITIS
FORMIS miscet imagines.*

De Consolat. Philosoph. L. V.

For what is Conversation between Man and Man?—It is a mutual intercourse of *Speaking* and *Hearing*.—To the Speaker, it is *to teach*; to the Hearer, it is *to learn*.—To the Speaker, it is *to descend* from *Ideas* to *Words*; to the Hearer, it is *to ascend* from *Words* to *Ideas*.—If the Hearer, in this ascent, can arrive at *no Ideas*, then is he said *not to understand*; if he ascend to Ideas dissimilar and heterogeneous, then is he said *to misunderstand*.—What then is requisite, that he may be said *to understand*?—That he should ascend to certain Ideas, treasured up *within himself*, correspondent and similar to those *within the Speaker*. The same may be said of a *Writer* and a *Reader*; as when any one reads to-day or to-morrow, or here or in *Italy*, what *Euclid* wrote in *Greece* two thousand years ago.

Now is it not marvellous, there should be *so exact an Identity of our Ideas*, if they

were only generated from *sensible Objects*, infinite in number, ever changing, distant in Time, distant in Place, and no one Particular the same with any other?

AGAIN, do we allow it possible for God to signify his *will* to Men; or for Men to signify their *wants* to God?—In both these cases there must be *an Identity of Ideas*, or else nothing is done either one way or the other. Whence then do these COMMON IDENTIC IDEAS come?—Those of Men, it seems, come all from *Sensation*. And whence come God's Ideas?—Not surely from *Sensation* too; for this we can hardly venture to affirm, without giving to Body that notable *Precedence of being prior to the Intellection of even God himself*.—Let them then be *original*; let them be *connate, and essential to the divine Mind*.—If this be true, is it not a fortunate Event, that *Ideas of corporeal rise, and others of mental (things derived from subjects so*

*totally distinct) should so happily coincide
in the same wonderful Identity?*

HAD we not better reason thus upon so abstruse a Subject?—Either all MINDS have their Ideas *derived*, or all have them *original*; or *some have them original, and some derived*. If all Minds have them derived, they must be derived from something, *which is itself not Mind*, and thus we fall insensibly into a kind of Atheism. If all have them original, *then are all Minds divine*, an Hypothesis by far more plausible than the former. But if this be not admitted, then must *one Mind* (at least) have *original Ideas*, and the rest have them *derived*. Now supposing this last, whence are those Minds, whose Ideas are derived, most likely to derive them?—From MIND, or from BODY?—From MIND, a thing *homogeneous*; or from BODY, a thing *heterogeneous*? From MIND, such as (from the Hypothesis) has *original Ideas*; or

from BODY, which we cannot discover to have any Ideas at all?—An Examination of this kind, pursued with accuracy and temper, is the most probable method of solving these doubts. It is thus we shall be enabled with more assurance to decide, whether we are to admit the Doctrine of *the Epicurean Poet*,

CORPOREA NATURA *animum constare,*
animamque;

or trust *the Mantuan Bard*, when he sings in divine numbers,

Igneus est ollis vigor, et CÆLESTIS ORIGO
Seminibus.—

BUT it is now time to quit these Specu-

" ΝΟΥΝ δὲ ἐδὲν ΣΩΜΑ γεννᾶ· πως γὰρ ἀν τὰ
ΑΝΟΗΤΑ ΝΟΥΝ γεννησοι; No BODY produces MIND:
for how should THINGS DEVOID OF MIND produce MIND?
Sallust de Diis et Mundo, c. 8.

lations. Those, who would trace them farther, and have leisure for such studies, may perhaps find themselves led into regions of Contemplation, affording them prospects both interesting and pleasant. We have at present said as much as was requisite to our Subject, and shall therefore pass from hence to our concluding chapter.

CHAP. V.

Subordination of Intelligence—Difference of Ideas, both in particular Men, and in whole Nations—Different Genius of different Languages—Character of the English, the Oriental, the Latin, and the Greek Languages—Superlative Excellence of the Last—Conclusion.

ORIGINAL TRUTH,^(*) having the most intimate connection with the *Supreme Intelligence*, may be said (as it were) to

(*) Those Philosophers, whose Ideas of *Being* and *Knowledge* are derived from *Body* and *Sensation*, have a short method to explain the nature of TRUTH. It is a *factitious* thing, made by every man for himself; which comes and goes, just as it is remembered and forgot; which in the order of things makes its appearance the *last* of any, being not only subsequent to sensible Objects, but even to our *Sensations* of them. According to this Hypothesis, there are many Truths, which have been, and are

shine with unchangeable splendor, enlightening throughout the Universe every possible Subject, by nature susceptible of its benign influence.—Passions and other obstacles may prevent indeed its efficacy, as clouds and vapours may obscure the Sun; but itself neither admits *Diminution*, nor *Change*, because the Darkness respects

no longer; others, that will be, and have not been yet; and multitudes, that possibly may never exist at all.

But there are other Reasoners, who must surely have had very different notions; those, I mean, who represent TRUTH not as the *last*, but the *first* of Beings; who call it *immutable, eternal, omnipresent*; Attributes, that all indicate something more than human. To these it must appear somewhat strange, how men should imagine, that a crude account of the method *how they perceive Truth*, was to pass for an account of *Truth itself*; as if to describe the road to *London*, could be called a Description of that Metropolis.

For my own part, when I read the detail about *Sensation and Reflection*, and am taught the process at large how my Ideas are all generated, I seem to view the human Soul in the light of a Crucible, where Truths are pro-

only particular Percipients. Among *these* therefore we must look for ignorance and error, and for that *Subordination of Intelligence*, which is their natural consequence.

WE have daily experience in the Works of ART, that a *partial Knowledge* will suffice for *Contemplation*, tho' we know not enough, to profess ourselves Artists. Much more is this true, with respect to

duced by a kind of logical Chemistry. They may consist (for aught we know) of *natural materials*, but are as much *creatures of our own*, as a Bolus or Elixir.

If *Milton* by his URANIA intended to represent TRUTH, he certainly referred her to a much more antient, as well as a far more noble origin.

— Heav'ly born ! —

*Before the hills appear'd, or fountains flow'd,
Thou with eternal Wisdom didst converse,
Wisdom thy Sister ; and with her didst play
In presence of th' almighty Father, pleas'd
With thy celestial Song.—*

P. L. VII.

See *Proverbe VIII. 22, &c.* *Jeremiah X. 10. Marc. Antonin. IX. 1.*

NATURE; and well for mankind it is found to be true, else never could we attain any *natural Knowledge* at all. For if the *constitutive Proportions of a Clock* are so subtle, that few conceive them truly, but the Artist himself; what shall we say to those *seminal Proportions*, which make the essence and character of every *natural Subject*?—Partial views, the Imperfections of Sense; Inattention, Idleness, the turbulence of Passions; Education, local Sentiments, Opinions, and Belief, conspire in many instances to furnish us with Ideas, some *too general*, some *too partial*, and (what is worse than all this) with many that are *erroneous*, and contrary to Truth. These it behoves us to correct as far as possible, by cool suspense and candid examination.

Νῦντος, καὶ μέμνης ἀπίστειν, ἀρθρα ταῦτα τὸν οἶκον.

AND thus by a connection perhaps little expected, the Cause of LETTERS,

and that of VIRTUE appear to co-incide, it being the business of both *to examine our Ideas, and to amend them by the Standard of Nature and of Truth.*^(v)

IN this important Work, we shall be led to observe, how Nations, like single Men, have their *peculiar Ideas*; how these *peculiar Ideas* become THE GENIUS OF THEIR LANGUAGE, since the *Symbol* must of course correspond to its *Archetype*;^(vi)

^(v) How useful to ETHIC SCIENCE, and indeed to KNOWLEDGE in general, a GRAMMATICAL DISQUISITION into the *Etymology* and *Meaning* of WORDS was esteemed by the chief and ablest Philosophers, may be seen by consulting *Plato* in his *Cratylus*; *Xenoph. Mem.* IV. 5, 6. *Arrian. Epict.* I. 17. II. 10. *Marc. Anton.* III. 11. V. 8. X. 8.

^(vi) ΗΘΟΥΣ ΧΑΡΑΚΤΗΡ ἐσι τὸν ἀνθρώπων λόγος. Stob. Capiuntur Signa haud levia, sed observatu digna (quod fortasse quispiam non putatur) de ingentis et moribus populorum et nationum ex linguis ipsorum. Bacon. de Augm. Scient. VI. 1. Vid. etiam. Quintil. L. XI. p. 675. Edit. Capperon. Diog. L. I. p. 58. et Menag. Com. Thuc. Diop. V. 16.

how the *wisest* Nations, having the *most* and *best Ideas*, will consequently have the *best* and *most copious Languages*; how others, whose Languages are motley and compounded, and who have borrowed from different countries different Arts and Practices, discover by *Words*, to whom they are indebted for *Things*.

To illustrate what has been said by a few examples. WE BRITONS in our time have been remarkable borrowers, as our *multiform* Language may sufficiently shew. Our terms in *polite Literature* prove, that this came from *Greece*; our terms in *Music* and *Painting*, that these came from *Italy*; our Phrases in *Cookery* and *War*, that we learnt these from the *French*; and our Phrases in *Navigation*, that we were taught by the *Flemings* and *Low Dutch*. These many and very different Sources of our Language may be the cause, why it is so deficient in *Regularity* and *Analogy*.

Yet we have this advantage to compensate the defect, that what we want in *Elegance*, we gain in *Copiousness*, in which last respect few Languages will be found superior to our own.

LET us pass from ourselves to the NATIONS OF THE EAST. The “^w Eastern World, from the earliest days, has been at all times the Seat of enormous Monarchy. On its natives fair Liberty never shed its genial influence. If at any time civil Discords arose among them (and arise there did innumerable) the contest was never about the *Form of their*

^(d) Διὰ γὰρ τὸ δελικώτεροι εἶναι τὰ ἡθη οἱ μὲν Βάρβαροι τῶν Ἑλλήνων, οἱ δὲ περὶ τὴν Ασίαν τῶν περὶ τὴν Εὐρώπην, ὑπομένοσι τὴν δεσποτικὴν ἀρχὴν, ὃδεν δυσχερανοῦτες. *For the Barbarians, by being more slavish in their Manners than the Greeks, and those of Asia than those of Europe, submit to despotic Government without murmuring or discontent.* Arist. Polit. III. 4.

Government; for this was an object, of which the Combatants had no conception); it was all from the poor motive of, *who should be their Master*, whether a *Cyrus* or an *Artaxerxes*, a *Mahomet*, or a *Mustapha*.

SUCH was their Condition, and what was the consequence?—Their Ideas became consonant to their servile State, and their Words became consonant to their servile Ideas. The great Distinction, for ever in their sight, was that of *Tyrant* and *Slave*; the most unnatural one conceivable, and the most susceptible of pomp, and empty exaggeration. Hence they talked of Kings as Gods, and of themselves, as the meanest and most abject Reptiles. Nothing was either great or little in moderation, but every Sentiment was heightened by incredible Hyperbole. Thus tho' they sometimes ascended into

the Great and Magnificent,[“] they as frequently degenerated into the *Tumid* and *Bombast*. *The Greeks too of Asia* became infected by their neighbours, who were often at times not only their neighbours, but their masters; and hence that Luxuriance of the *Asiatic Stile*, unknown to the chaste eloquence and purity of *Athens*. But of the *Greeks* we forbear to speak now, as we shall speak of them more fully, when we have first considered the Nature or Genius of the *Romans*.

AND what sort of People may we pronounce the *ROMANS*?—A Nation engaged in wars and commotions, some foreign, some domestic, which for seven hundred years wholly engrossed their thoughts.

[“] The truest Sublime of the East may be found in the Scriptures, of which perhaps the principal cause is the intrinsic Greatness of the Subjects there treated; the Creation of the Universe, the dispensations of divine Providence, &c.

Hence therefore their LANGUAGE became, like their Ideas, copious in all Terms expressive of things *political*, and well adapted to the purposes both of *History* and *popular Eloquence*.—But what was their Philosophy?—As a Nation, it was none, if we may credit their ablest Writers. And hence the Unfitness of their Language to this Subject; a defect, which even *Cicero* is compelled to confess, and more fully makes appear, when he writes Philosophy himself, from the number of terms, which he is obliged to invent.⁶⁷

⁶⁷ See *Cic. de Fin.* I. C. 1, 2, 3. III. C. I, 2, 4. &c. but in particular *Tusc. Disp.* I. 3. where he says, PHILOSOPHIA jacuit usque ad hanc etatem, nec ullum habuit lumen LITERARUM LATINARUM; que illustranda et excitanda nobis est; ut si, &c. See also *Tusc. Disp.* IV. 3. and *Acad.* I. 2. where it appears, that till *CICERO* applied himself to the writing of *Philosophy*, the *Romans* had nothing of the kind in their Language, except some mean performances of *Amafanus* the *Epicurean*, and others of the same sect. How far the *Romans* were indebted to *Cicero* for *Philosophy*, and with what industry, as well as

Virgil seems to have judged the most truly of his Countrymen, when, admitting their inferiority in the more elegant Arts, he concludes at last with his usual majesty,

eloquence, he cultivated the Subject, may be seen not only from the titles of those Works that are now lost, but much more from the many noble ones still fortunately preserved.

The Epicurean Poet LUCRETIUS, who flourished nearly at the same time, seems by his silence to have overlooked the Latin writers of his own sect; deriving all his Philosophy, as well as Cicero, from Grecian Sources: and, like him, acknowledging the difficulty of writing in *Philosophy in Latin*, both from the *Poverty* of the Tongue, and from the *Novelty* of the Subject.

Nec me animi fallit, GRAIORUM obscura reperit
Difficile inlustrare LATINIS versibus esse,
(*Multa novis rebus presertim quod sit agendum,*)
Propter EGESTATEM LINGUA et RERUM NOVITATEM;
Sed tua me virtus tamen, et sperata voluptas
Suavis amicitiae quemvis preferre laborem
Suadet —

Lucr. I. 137.

In the same age, Varro, among his numerous works, wrote some in the way of *Philosophy*; as did the Patriot BRUTUS, a Treatise concerning *Virtue*, much applauded by Cicero; but these Works are now lost.

Soon after the writers above mentioned came HORACE,

Tu REGERE IMPERIO POPULOS, Romane,
memento,
*(Haec tibi erunt artes) pacisque imponere
 morem,*
Parcere subjectis, et debellare superbos.

some of whose satires and epistles may be justly ranked amongst the most valuable pieces of *Latin Philosophy*, whether we consider the purity of their Stile, or the great Address with which they treat the Subject.

After *Horace*, tho' with as long an interval as from the days of *Augustus* to those of *Nero*, came the Satirist *PEASCIUS*, the friend and disciple of the Stoic *Cornutus*; to whose precepts, as he did honour by his virtuous Life, so his works, tho' small, shew an early proficiency in the Science of Morals. Of him it may be said, that he is almost the single *difficult* writer among the *Latin Classics*, whose meaning has sufficient merit to make it worth while to Labour through his obscurities.

In the same degenerate and tyrannic period lived also *SENECA*; whose character both as a Man and a Writer, is discussed with great accuracy by the noble author of the *Characteristics*, to whom we refer.

Under a milder dominion, that of *Hadrian* and the *Antonines*, lived *AULUS GELLIUS*, or (as some call him) *AGELLIUS*, an entertaining writer in the miscellaneous way; well skilled in Criticism and Antiquity; who, tho' he can hardly be entitled to the name of a *Philosopher*, yet deserves not to pass unmentioned here, from the curious fragments of *Philosophy* interspersed in his works.

FROM considering the *Romans* let us pass to THE GREEKS. THE GRECIAN COMMONWEALTHS, while they maintained

With *Aulus Gellius* we range MACROBIUS, not because a Contemporary (for he is supposed to have lived under *Honorius* and *Theodosius*), but from his near resemblance, in the character of a Writer. His works, like the other's, are miscellaneous; filled with Mythology and antient Literature, some Philosophy being intermixed. His Commentary upon the *Somnium Scipionis* of *Cicero*, may be considered as wholly of the *philosophical* kind.

In the same age with *Aulus Gellius*, flourished ARULIUS of *Madaura* in *Africa*, a *Platonic* Writer, whose Matter in general far exceeds his perplexed and affected Stile, too conformable to the false Rhetoric of the Age when he lived.

Of the same Country, but of a later Age, and a harsher Stile, was MARTIANUS CAPELLA, if indeed he deserve not the name rather of a *Philologist*, than of a *Philosopher*.

After *Capella*, we may rank CHALCIDIUS the *Platonic*, tho' both his Age, and Country, and Religion are doubtful. His manner of writing is rather more agreeable than that of the two preceding, nor does he appear to be their inferior in the knowledge of Philosophy, his work being a laudable Commentary upon the *Timaeus* of *Plato*.

their Liberty, were the most heroic Confederacy that ever existed. They were

The last *Latin* Philosopher was *Boethius*, who was descended from some of the noblest of the *Roman* Families, and was Consul in the beginning of the sixth Century. He wrote many philosophical Works, the greatest part in the *Logical* way. But his *Ethic* piece, *On the Consolation of Philosophy*, and which is partly prose and partly verse, deserves great encomiums both for the Matter, and for the Stile; in which last he approaches the Purity of a far better age than his own, and is in all respects preferable to those crabbed *Africans* already mentioned. By command of *Theodoric*, king of the *Goths*, it was the hard fate of this worthy Man to suffer death; with whom the *Latin Tongue*, and the last remains of *Roman Dignity*, may be said to have sunk in the western World.

There were other *Romans*, who left *Philosophical Writings*; such as *Musonius Rufus*, and the two Emperors, *Marcus Antoninus* and *Julian*; but as these preferred the use of the *Greek Tongue* to their own, they can hardly be considered among the number of *Latin Writers*.

And so much (by way of Sketch) for THE LATIN AUTHORS OF PHILOSOPHY; a small number for so vast an Empire, if we consider them as all the product of near six successive centuries.

the politest, the bravest, and the wisest of men. In the short space of little more than a Century, they became such Statesmen, Warriors, Orators, Historians, Physicians, Poets, Critics, Painters, Sculptors, Architects, and (last of all) Philosophers, that one can hardly help considering THAT GOLDEN PERIOD, as a Providential Event in honour of human Nature, to shew to what perfection the Species might ascend.^(a)

^(a) If we except *Homer*, *Hesiod*, and the *Lyric Poets*, we hear of few *Grecian* Writers before the expedition of *Xerxes*. After that monarch had been defeated, and the dread of the *Persian* power was at an end, the EFFULGENCE OF Grecian GENIUS (if I may use the expression) broke forth, and shone till the time of *Alexander the Macedonian*, after whom it disappeared, and never rose again. This is that *Golden Period* spoken of above. I do not mean that *Greece* had not many writers of great merit subsequent to that period, and especially of the philosophic kind; but the *Great*, the *Striking*, the *Sublime* (call it as you please) attained at that time to a height, to which it never could ascend in any after age.

NOW THE LANGUAGE OF THESE GREEKS was truly like themselves, it was conformable to their transcendant and

The same kind of fortune befel the people of *Rome*. When the *Punic* wars were ended, and *Carthage* their dreaded rival was no more, then (as *Horace* informs us) they began to cultivate the politer arts. It was soon after this, their great Orators, and Historians, and Poets arose, and *Rome*, like *Greece*, had her *Golden Period*, which lasted to the death of *Octavius Caesar*.

I call these two Periods, from the two greatest Geniuses that flourished in each, one THE SOCRATIC PERIOD, the other the CICERONIAN.

There are still farther analogies subsisting between them. Neither Period commenced, as long as solicitude for the common welfare engaged men's attentions, and such wars impended, as threatened their destruction by Foreigners and Barbarians. But when once these fears were over, a general security soon ensued, and instead of attending to the arts of defence and self-preservation, they began to cultivate those of Elegance and Pleasure. Now, as these naturally produced a kind of wanton insolence (not unlike the vicious temper of high-fed animals), so by this the bands of union were insensibly dissolved. Hence then among the Greeks that fatal *Peloponnesian War*, which together with other wars, its immediate consequence, broke

universal Genius. Where Matter so abounded, Words followed of course, and

the confederacy of their Commonwealths ; wasted their strength ; made them jealous of each other ; and thus paved a way for the contemptible kingdom of *Macedon* to enslave them all, and ascend in a few years to universal Monarchy.

A like luxuriance of prosperity sowed discord among the *Romans* ; raised those unhappy contests between the *Senate* and the *Gracchi* ; between *Sylla* and *Marius* ; between *Pompey* and *Cæsar* ; till, at length, after the last struggle for Liberty by those brave Patriots *Brutus* and *Cassius* at *Philippi*, and the subsequent defeat of *Anthony* at *Actium*, the *Romans* became subject to the dominion of a FELLOW-CITIZEN.

It must indeed be confessed, that after *Alexander* and *Octavius* had established their Monarchies, there were many bright Geniuses, who were eminent under their Government. *Aristotle* maintained a friendship and epistolary correspondence with *Alexander*. In the time of the same monarch lived *Theophrastus*, and the Cynic *Diogenes*. Then also *Demosthenes* and *Aechines* spoke their two celebrated Orations. So likewise in the time of *Octavius*, *Virgil* wrote his *Aeneid*, and with *Horace*, *Varius*, and many other fine Writers, partook of his protection and royal munificence. But then it must be re-

those exquisite in every kind, as the Ideas for which they stood. And hence it followed, there was not a subject to be found, which could not with propriety be expressed in *Greek*.

HERE were Words and Numbers for the Humour of an *Aristophanes*; for the native Elegance of a *Philemon* or *Menander*; for the amorous Strains of a

membered, that these men were bred and educated in the principles of a free Government. It was hence they derived that high and manly spirit which made them the admiration of after-ages. The Successors and Forms of Government left by *Alexander* and *Octavius*, soon stopt the growth of any thing farther in the kind. So true is that noble saying of *Longinus*—Θρέψαι τε γὰρ ἵκανή τὰ φρονήματα τῶν μεγαλοφρόνων ή ΕΛΕΥΘΕΡΙΑ, η ἐπελπίσαι, η ἄμα διωθεῖν τὸ πρόθυμον τῆς πρὸς ἀλλήλες ἔριδος, η τῆς περὶ τὰ πρωτεῖα φιλογιμίας. *It is LIBERTY that is formed to nurse the sentiments of great Geniuses; to inspire them with hope; to push forward the propensity of contest one with another, and the generous emulation of being the first in rank.* De Subl. Sect. 44.

Mimnermus or *Sappho*; for the rural lays of a *Theocritus* or *Bion*; and for the sublime Conceptions of a *Sophocles* or *Homer*. The same in Prose. Here *Iocrates* was enabled to display his Art, in all the accuracy of Periods, and the nice counterpoise of Diction. Here *Demosthenes* found materials for that nervous Composition, that manly force of unaffected Eloquence, which rushed, like a torrent, too impetuous to be withheld.

Who were more different in exhibiting their *Philosophy*, than *Xenophon*, *Plato*, and his disciple *Aristotle*? Different, I say, in their character of *Composition*; for as to their *Philosophy itself*, it was in reality *the same*. *Aristotle*, strict, methodic, and orderly; subtle in Thought; sparing in Ornament; with little address to the Passions or Imagination; but exhibiting the whole with such a pregnant

brevity, that in every sentence we seem to read a page. How exquisitely is this all performed in *Greek*? Let those, who imagine it may be done as well in another Language, satisfy themselves, either by attempting to translate him, or by perusing his translations already made by men of learning. On the contrary, when we read either *Xenophon* or *Plato*, nothing of this *method* and strict *order* appears. The *Formal* and *didactic* is wholly dropt. Whatever they may teach, it is without professing to be teachers; a train of Dialogue and truly polite Address, in which, as in a Mirrour, we behold human Life, adorned in all its colours of Sentiment and Manners.

AND yet though these differ in this manner from the *Stagirite*, how different are they likewise in character from each other?—*Plato*, copious, figurative, and

majestic ; intermixing at times the facetious and satiric ; enriching his Works with Tales and Fables, and the mystic Theology of antient times. *Xenophon*, the Pattern of perfect simplicity ; every where smooth, harmonious, and pure ; declining the figurative, the marvellous, and the mystic ; ascending but rarely into the Sublime ; nor then so much trusting to the colours of stile, as to the intrinsic dignity of the Sentiment itself.

THE Language in the mean time, in which *He* and *Plato* wrote, appears to suit so accurately with the Stile of both, that when we read either of the two, we cannot help thinking, that it is he alone, who has hit its character, and that it could not have appeared so elegant in any other manner.

AND thus is THE GREEK TONGUE,

from its propriety and universality, made for all that is great, and all that is beautiful, in every Subject, and under every Form of writing.

*GRAIIS ingenium, GRAIIS dedit ore rotundo
Musa loqui.*

IT were to be wished, that those amongst us, who either write or read, with a view to employ their liberal leisure (for as to such as do either from views more sordid, we leave them, like Slaves, to their destined drudgery), it were to be wished, I say, that the liberal (if they have a relish for letters) would inspect the finished Models of *Grecian Literature*; that they would not waste those hours which they cannot recall, upon the meaner productions of the *French* and *English* Press; upon that fungous growth of Novels and of Pamphlets, where, it is to be feared, they rarely

find any rational pleasure, and more rarely still, any solid improvement.

To be *competently* skilled in antient learning, is by no means a work of such insuperable pains. The very progress itself is attended with delight, and resembles a Journey through some pleasant Country, where every mile we advance, new charms arise. It is certainly as easy to be a Scholar, as a Gamester, or many other Characters equally illiberal and low. The same application, the same quantity of habit will fit us for one, as completely as for the other. And as to those who tell us, with an air of seeming wisdom, that *it is Men, and not Books,* we must study, to become knowing; this I have always remarked, from repeated Experience, to be the common consolation and language of Dunces. They shelter their ignorance under a few bright

Examples, whose transcendent abilities, without the common helps, have been sufficient *of themselves* to great and important Ends. But alas!

Decipit exemplar vitiis imitabile—

IN truth, each man's Understanding, when ripened and mature, is a composite of *natural Capacity*, and of *superinduced Habit*. Hence the greatest Men will be necessarily those, who possess *the best Capacities*, cultivated with *the best Habits*. Hence also moderate Capacities, when adorned with valuable Science, will far transcend others the most acute by nature, when either neglected, or applied to low and base purposes. And thus for the honour of CULTURE and GOOD LEARNING, *they are able to render a Man, if he will take the pains, intrinsically more excellent than his natural Superiors.*

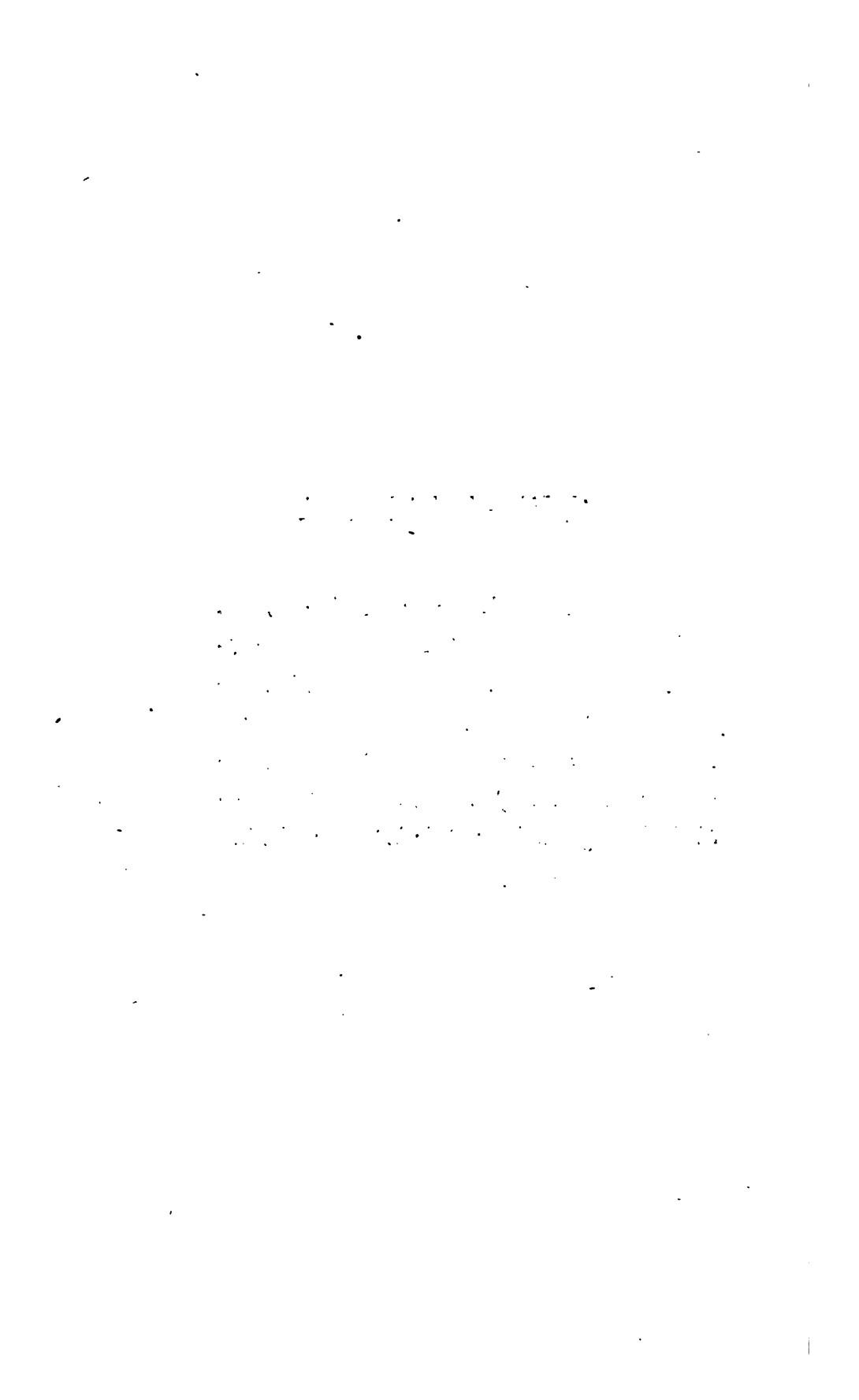
AND so much at present as to GENERAL IDEAS; *how we acquire them; whence they are derived; what is their Nature; and what their connection with Language.* So much likewise as to the Subject of this Treatise, UNIVERSAL GRAMMAR.

END OF THE THIRD BOOK.



ADVERTISEMENT.

THE following Notes are either Translations of former Notes, or Additions to them. The additional are chiefly Extracts from Greek Manuscripts, which (as the Author has said already concerning others of the same kind) are valuable both for their Rarity, and for their intrinsic Merit.



ADDITIONAL NOTES.

PAGE 95.—TO STOP, &c.] The Quotation from *Proclus* in the Note may be thus rendered—**THAT THING IS AT REST, WHICH FOR A TIME PRIOR AND SUBSEQUENT IS IN THE SAME PLACE, both itself and its Parts.**

P. 105. In the Note, for γιγνόμενον read γενόμενον, and render the passage thus—*For by this faculty (namely the faculty of Sense) we neither know the Future, nor the Past, but the Present only.*

P. 106. NOTE ⁽³⁾.] The passage of *Philoponus*, here referred to, but by mistake omitted, has respect to the notion of beings corporeal and sensible, which were said to be nearly approaching to Non-Entitys. The Author explains this, among other reasons, by the following—Πῶς δὲ τοῖς μὴ ἔστι γειτνιάζει; Πρώτον μὲν, ἐπειδὴ ἐνταῦθα τὸ παρελθόν ἐστι ὃ τὸ μέλλον, ταῦτα δὲ μὴ ὄντα τὸ μὲν γὰρ ἡφάνται ὃς ἔτι ἔστι, τὸ δὲ ἐπώ ἐστι συμπαραθέει δὲ, χρόνῳ τὰ φύσικα πάντα, μᾶλλον δὲ τῆς κινήσεως αὐτῶν παρακολέθηρά εστι ὁ χρόνος. *How therefore is it that they approach nearly to Non-Entitys? In the first place, because here (where they exist) exists the Past and the Future, and these are Non-Entitys; for the one is vanished, and is no more, the other is not as yet. Now all natural Substances pass away along with Time, or rather it is upon their Motion that Time is an Attendant.*

P. 119—in the Note here subjoined, mention is made of the REAL Now, or INSTANT, and its efficacy. To which we may add, that there is not only a necessary Connection between *Existence* and the *Present Instant*, because no other Point of Time can properly be said to be, but also between *Existence* and *Life*, because whatever lives, by the same reason necessarily Is. Hence *Sophocles*, speaking of *Time present*, elegantly says of it—

——χρόνῳ τῷ ζώντι, ἡ παρόντι νῦν·

THE LIVING, and now present TIME.

Trachin. V. 1185.

P. 227.—The Passage in *Virgil* of which *Servius* here speaks, is a description of *Turnus's* killing two brothers, *Amycus* and *Diores*; after which the Poet says of him,

——*curru abecissa Duorum
Suspedit capita.*——

This, literally translated, is—he hung up on his chariot the heads of Two persons, which were cut off, whereas the sense requires, of THE Two persons, that is to say, of *Amycus* and *Diores*. Now this by *Amborum* would have been express properly, as *Amborum* means THE Two; by *Duorum* is express improperly, as it means only Two indefinitely.

P. 259.—The Passage in Note ^(e) from *Themistius* may be thus rendered—Nature in many instances appears to make her transition by little and little, so that in some Beings, it may be doubted, whether they are Animal, or Vegetable..

P. 294.—Note ⁽¹⁾—*There are in the number of things many, which have a most known EXISTENCE, but a most unknown ESSENCE; such for example as Motion, Place, and more than either of them, Time. The EXISTENCE of each of these is known and indisputable, but what their ESSENCE is, or Nature, is among the most difficult things to discern. The Soul also is in the same Class: that it is something, is most evident; but what it is, is a matter not so easy to learn.* Alex. Aphrod. p. 142.

P. 340—[LANGUAGE—INCAPABLE OF COMMUNICATING DEMONSTRATION.] See 'Threè Treatises, or Vol: I. p. 220, and the additional note to the Words, *The Source of infinite Truths, &c.*]

P. 368—in the Note—*yet so held the Philosopher of Malmesbury, and the Author of the Essay, &c.]*

Philoponus, from the Philosophy of *Plato* and *Pythagoras*, seems to have far excelled these *Moderns* in his account of *WISDOM* or *PHILOSOPHY*, and its *Attributes*, or *essential Characters*.—*Ιδίον γάρ φιλοσοφίας τὸ ἐν τοῖς πολλοῖς ἔχει διαφορὰν δεῖξαι τὴν κοινωνίαν, οὐ τὸ ἐν τοῖς πολλοῖς ἔχει κοινωνίαν δεῖξαι τίνι διαφέρσιν· ὁ γάρ δυσχερὲς τὸ δεῖξαι φάτνης (*lege φάτης*) οὐ πέριτερᾶς κοινωνίαν (*παντὶ γὰρ πρόπτουν*), ἀλλ' ὁ (*lege δύο*) τὸ διάφορον τέτων εἰπεῖν· ὅδὲ κυνὸς οὐ ἵππος διαφορὰν, ἀλλὰ τὶ κοινὸν ἔχεσιν.* IT IS THE PROPER BUSINESS OF PHILOSOPHY TO SHEW IN MANY THINGS, WHICH HAVE DIFFERENCE, WHAT IS THEIR COMMON CHARACTER; AND IN MANY THINGS, WHICH HAVE A COMMON CHARACTER, THRO' WHAT IT IS THEY DIFFER. It is indeed

no difficult matter to shew the common Character of a Wood-Pigeon and a Dove (for this is evident to every one), but rather to tell where lies the Difference; nor to tell the difference between a Dog and a Horse, but rather to shew, what they possess in common. Philop. Com. M.S. in Nicomach. Arithm.

P. 379—THEY ARE MORE EXQUISITE THAN, &c.] The Words of Aristotle, here referred to, are these—μᾶλλον δὲ εἰ τὸ ὃ ἔνεκα οὐ τὸ καλὸν ἐν τοῖς τῆς φύσεως ἔργοις, η̄ ἐν τοῖς τῆς τεχνῆς. THE PRINCIPLES OF DESIGN and BEAUTY are more in the Works of NATURE, than they are in those of ART.

P. 379—WE MUST OF NECESSITY ADMIT A MIND, &c.] The following quotation, taken from the third Book of a manuscript *Comment of Proclus on the Parmenides of Plato*, is here given for the sake of those, who have curiosity with regard to the doctrine of IDEAS, as held by ancient Philosophers.

Εἰ δὲ δεῖ συντόμως εἰπεῖν τὴν αἰτίαν τῆς τῶν ἰδεῶν ὑποθέσεως, διὸ ήν ἐκείνοις ἡρεσε, ρόητον δι ταῦτα πάντα δου δρατὰ, ὑράνια ἢ ὑπὸ σελήνην, η̄ ἀπὸ ταυτομάτης ἐτίν, η̄ καὶ' αἰτίαν ἀλλ' ἀπὸ ταυτομάτης ἀδύνατον ἐτίν γάρ ἐν τοῖς διέροις τὰ κρείττονα, νῦν, η̄ λόγος, η̄ αἰτία, η̄ τὰ αἰτίας, η̄ θεοὶ τὰ ἀποτελέσματα κρείττω τῶν ἀρχῶν, πρὸς τῷ η̄ δ φησιν δὲ Ἀριστελῆς· δεῖ πρὸ τῶν κατὰ συμβεβηκότες αἰτίαν εἶναι τὰ καθ' αὐτὰ, τέτων γάρ ἐκβασίς τὸ κατὰ συμβεβηκός· ὅτε τῷ ἀπὸ ταυτομάτης πρεσβύτερον ἀν ην τὸ καὶ' αἰτίαν, εἰ η̄ ἀπὸ ταυτομάτη τὰ Θειότατα ήν τῶν φανερῶν. If

therefore we are to relate concisely the Cause, why THE HYPOTHESIS OF IDEAS pleased them (namely Parmenides, Zeno, Socrates, &c.) we must begin by observing that all the various visible objects around us, the heavenly as well as the sublunar, are either from CHANCE, or according to a CAUSE. FROM CHANCE IS IMPOSSIBLE; for then the more excellent things (such as Mind, and Reason, and Cause, and the Effects of Cause) will be among those things that come last, and so the ENDINGS of things will be more excellent than their BEGINNINGS. To which too may be added what Aristotle says; that ESSENTIAL CAUSES OUGHT TO BE PRIOR TO ACCIDENTAL, in as much as EVERY ACCIDENTAL CAUSE IS A DEVIATION FROM THEM; so that whatever is the effect of such essential Cause [as is indeed every work of Art and human Ingenuity] must needs be prior to that which is the effect of Chance, even though we were to refer to Chance the most divine of visible objects [the heavens themselves].

The Philosopher, having thus proved a *definite Cause* of the World in opposition to *Chance*, proceeds to shew that from the Unity and concurrent Order of things, this Cause must be **ONE**. After which he goes on as follows.—

—Εἰ μὲν ἐν ἀλογον τότο, ἄτοπον ἔται γάρ τι πάλιν τῶν ὑστέρων τῆς τέτων αἰτίας κρείττον, τὸ κάτα λόγον ἐγνῶσιν ποιεῖν, εἰσω τῷ Παντὸς δν, ἐτ τῷ "Ολις μέρος, δ ἔστιν ἀπ' αἰτίας ἀλόγης τοιεῖτο. Εἰ δὲ λόγον ἔχον, ἐτ αὐτὸ γινῶσκουν, οἴδεν ἔαυτὸ δήπτε τῶν πάντων αἰτιον δν, η τότο ἀγνοεῖν, ἀγνοήσει τὴν ἔαυτε φύσιν. Εἰ δὲ οἴδεν, ὅτι κατ' ἁσίαν ἔστι τῷ παντὸς αἰτιον, τὸ δὲ ὠρισμένως εἰδός θάτε-

ρον, ἡ Σάτερον οἰδεν εἶ ἀνάγκης, οἰδεν ἄρα η̄ εἴνιν αἰτίουν ὥρισμένως· οἰδεν δὲ η̄ τὸ Πᾶν, ἡ πάντα εἶ ὃν τὸ Πᾶν, ὃν εἴτιν εἰτίουν. Καὶ εἰ τέτο, η̄τοι εἰς ἐαυτὸν ἄρα βλέπον, ἡ ἐαυτὸν γινώσκον, οἰδε τὰ μετ' αὐτῷ. Διφορίς ἄρα η̄ εἰδεσιν ἀνθλοις οἰδε τὸς Κοσμικὸς Δογμας, ἡ τὰ εἰδη, εἶ ὃν τὸ Πᾶν, η̄ εἴνιν ἐν αὐτῷ τὸ Πᾶν, ώς ἐν αἰτίᾳ, χωρὶς τῆς ὅλης.—
Now if this Cause be void of Reason, that indeed would be absurd; for then again there would be something among those things, which came last in order, more excellent than their Principle or Cause. I mean by more excellent, something operating according to Reason and Knowledge, and yet within that Universe, and a Part of that Whole, which is, what it is, from a Cause devoid of Reason.

But if, on the contrary, THE CAUSE OF THE UNIVERSE BE A CAUSE, HAVING REASON and knowing itself, it of course knows itself to be the Cause of all things; else, being ignorant of this, it would be ignorant of its own nature. But if it know, that from ITS VERY ESSENCE IT IS THE CAUSE OF THE UNIVERSE, and if that, which knows one part of a Relation definitely, knows also of necessity the other, it knows for this reason definitely the thing of which it is the Cause. IT KNOWS THEREFORE THE UNIVERSE, and all things out of which the Universe is composed, of all which also it is the Cause. But if this be true, it is evident that BY LOOKING INTO ITSELF, AND BY KNOWING ITSELF, IT KNOWS WHAT COMES AFTER ITSELF, AND IS SUBSEQUENT. It is, therefore, through certain REASONS and FORMS DEVOID OF MATTER that it knows those mundane Reasons and Forms, out of which the

Universe is composed, and that the Universe is in it, as in a Cause, distinct from and without the Matter.

P. 380—**AGREEABLE TO WHICH IDEAS THESE WORKS ARE FASHIONED, &c.]** It is upon these Principles that *Nicomachus*, in his *Arithmetic*, p. 7, calls the Supreme Being an Artist—ἐν τῇ τῷ τεχνίτες Θεῖ διανοίᾳ, in *Dei artificis mente*. Where *Philoponus*, in his manuscript *Comment*, observes as follows—τεχνίτην φησὶ τὸν Θεόν, ὡς πάντων τὰς πρώτας αἰτίας ἐγ τὰς λόγιες αὐτῶν ἔχοντα. *He calls God an ARTIST, as possessing within himself the first Causes of all things, and their Reasons or Proportions.* Soon after speaking of those Sketches, after which Painters work and finish their Pictures, he subjoins —ώσπερ ἐν ἡμεῖς, εἰς τὰ τοιώτα σκιαγραφήματα βλέποντες, ποιεῖμεν τόδε τι, ὅτῳ ἐγ δὲ δημιουργός, πρὸς ἑκεῖνα ἀποβλέπων, τὰ τῆδε πάντα κεκόσμηκεν· ἀλλ' ίετον, ὅτι τὰ μὲν τῆδε σκιαγραφήματα ἀτελῆ εἰσιν, ἑκεῖνοι δὲ οἱ ἐν τῷ Θεῷ λόγοι ἀρχέτυποι ἐγ παντελεῖοι εἰσιν. *As therefore we, looking upon such Sketches as these, make such and such particular things, so also the Creator, looking at those Sketches of his, hath formed and adorned with beauty all things here below. We must remember, however, that the Sketches here are imperfect; but that the others, those REASONS or PROPORTIONS, which exist in GOD, are ARCHETYPAL and ALL-PERFECT.*

It is according to this Philosophy, that *Milton* represents *God*, after he had created this visible World, contemplating

—how it show'd
*In prospect from his throne, how good, how fair,
ANSWERING HIS GREAT IDEA.*—

P. Lost, VII. 556.

Proclus proves the Existence of these GENERAL IDEAS or UNIVERSAL FORMS by the following Arguments—
εἰ τοινυν ἔτιν αἴτια τῷ παντὸς αὐτῷ τῷ εἶναι ποιῶσα, τὸ δὲ αὐτῷ τῷ εἶναι ποιέν ἀπὸ τῆς ἑαυτῆς ποιεῖ θύλας τοῦτο ἔτι πρώτως, ὅπερ τὸ ποιεμένον δευτέρως οὐδὲ δὲ ἔτι πρώτως, δίδωσι τῷ ποιεμένῳ δευτέρως· οἷον τὸ πῦρ οὐδὲ δίδωσι θερμότητα ἄλλω, οὐδὲ τὸ θερμόν, η ψυχὴ δίδωσι ζωὴν, οὐδὲ έχει ζωὴν, οὐδὲ ἐπὶ πάντων ἴδοις ἀνὰ ἀληθῆ τὸν λόγον, δοα αὐτῷ τῷ εἶναι ποιεῖ. οὐδὲ τὸ αἴτιον δὲν τῷ παντὸς αὐτῷ τῷ εἶναι ποιέν ἔτι πρώτως, ὅπερ ὁ κόσμος δευτέρως. εἰ δὲ δὲ κόσμος πλήρωμα εἰδῶν ἔτιν παντοῖων, εἴη ἀν οὐκ ἐν τῷ αἴτιῳ τῷ κόσμῳ ταῦτα πρώτως· τὸ γάρ αὐτὸς αἴτιον οὐδὲ ήλιον, οὐ σελήνην, οὐ δινθρώπουν ὑπέσησε, οὐ ἵππον, οὐ δλως τὸ εἶδον, τὰ έν τῷ παντὶ. ταῦτα ἄρα πρώτως ἔτιν ἐν τῇ αἴτᾳ τῷ παντὸς, ἄλλος ήλιος παρὰ τὸν ἔμφαν, οὐδὲ ἄλλος δινθρώπος, οὐ τῶν εἰδῶν δομοίως ἔκαστον. Εἴτιν ἄρα τὰ εἶδη πρὸ τῶν αἰσθητῶν, οὐ αἴτια αὐτῶν τὰ δημιουργικὰ κατὰ τὸν εἰρημένον λόγον, ἐν τῇ μιᾷ τῷ κόσμῳ παντὸς αἴτᾳ προϋπάρχοντα. If therefore THE CAUSE OF THE UNIVERSE be a cause which operates merely by existing, and if that which operates merely by existing, operate from its own proper Essence, SUCH CAUSE IS PRIMABLY, WHAT ITS EFFECT IS SECONDARILY, and that which it is primarily, it giveth to its Effect secondarily. It is thus that Fire both giveth Warmth to something else, and is itself warm; that the

Soul giveth Life, and possesseth Life; and this reasoning you may perceive to be true in all things whatever, which operate merely by existing. It followe, therefore, THAT THE CAUSE OF THE UNIVERSE, operating after this manner, IS THAT PRIMARILY, WHICH THE WORLD IS SECUNDARILY. If therefore the WORLD be the plenitude of FORMS of all Sorts, these FORMS MUST ALSO BE PRIMARILY IN THE CAUSE OF THE WORLD, for it was the same Cause, which constituted the Sun, and the Moon, and Man, and Horse, and in general all the Forms existing in the Universe. These therefore exist primarily in the Cause of the Universe; another Sun besides the apparent, another Man, and so with respect to every Form else. The FORMS, therefore, PREVIOUS to the sensible and external FORMS, and which according to this reasoning are their ACTIVE and EFFICIENT CAUSES, are to be found PRE-EXISTING IN THAT ONE AND COMMON CAUSE OF ALL THE UNIVERSE. Procli Com. MS. in Plat. Parmenid. L. 3.

We have quoted the above passages for the same reason as the former; for the sake of those, who may have a curiosity to see a sample of this *antient Philosophy*, which (as some have held) may be traced up from *Plato* and *Socrates* to *Parmenides*, *Pythagoras*, and *Orpheus* himself.

If the Phrase, to operate merely by existing, should appear questionable, it must be explained upon a supposition, that in the Supreme Being no Attributes are secondary, intermittent, or adventitious, but all original, ever perfect, and essential. See p. 162, 359.

That we should not therefore think of a *blind unconscious operation*, like that of Fire here alluded to, the Author had long before prepared us, by uniting *Knowledge with natural Efficacy*, where he forms the Character of these *Divine and Creative Ideas*.

But let us hear him in his own Language.—ἀλλ᾽ εἰπερ ἑθλομεν τὴν ἰδιότητα αὐτῶν (sc. Ιδεῶν) ἀφορίσασθαι διὰ τῶν γνωριμωτέρων, ἀπὸ μὲν τῶν φυσικῶν λόγων λάβωμεν τὸ αὐτῷ τῷ εἶναι ποιητικὸν, ὃν δὴ ἡ ποίεστι· ἀπὸ δὲ τῶν τεχνικῶν τὸ γνωσικὸν, ὃν ποιεῖσιν, εἰ δὴ μὴ αὐτῷ τῷ εἶναι ποιῶσι, ἡ ταύτα ἐνώσαντες φῶμεν αἰτίας εἶναι τὰς Ιδέας δημιουργικὰς ἔμα ἡ νοεράς πάντων τῶν κατὰ φύσιν ἀποτελεσμάτων. But if we should chuse to define the peculiar character of IDEAS by things more known to us than themselves, let us assume from NATURAL PRINCIPLES THE POWER OF EFFECTING, MERELY BY EXISTING, all the things that they effect; and from ARTIFICIAL PRINCIPLES THE POWER OF COMPREHENDING all that they effect, although they did not effect them merely by existing; and then uniting those two, let us say that IDEAS are at once the EFFICIENT and INTELLIGENT CAUSES of all things produced according to Nature. From book the second of the same Comment.

The Schoolman, *Thomas Aquinas*, a subtle and acute writer, has the following sentence, perfectly corresponding with this Philosophy. *Res omnes comparantur ad Divinum Intellectum, sicut artificiata ad Artem.*

The Verses of *Orpheus* on this subject may be found

in the tract *De Mundo*, ascribed to Aristotle, p. 23. Edit.
Sylburg.

Ζεῦς ἄρσην γένετο, Ζεῦς κ. τ. λ.

P. 391.—WHERE ALL THINGS ARE INVELOPED, &c.]

—δσα πέρι ἐτι ΤΑ ΠΟΛΛΑ κατὰ δή τινα μερισμὸν,
τοσαύτα ἡ ΤΟ ΕΝ ἐκεῖνο πρὸ τῆ μερισμῆ κατὰ τὸ πάντη
ἀμερές· ὃ γὰρ ἔν, ὡς ἐλάχιστον, καθάπερ ὁ Σπεύσιππος
ἔδοξε λέγειν ἀλλ' ΕΝ ΩΣ ΠΑΝΤΑ. As numerous as is
THE MULTITUDE OF INDIVIDUALS by Partition, so
numerous also is that PRINCIPLE OF UNITY by universal
Impartibility. For it is not ONE, as a MINIMUM is one
(according to what Speucippus seemed to say), but it
is ONE, as being ALL THINGS. Damascius, περὶ
'Αρχῶν, MS.

P. 408—THE WISEST NATIONS—THE MOST COPIOUS
LANGUAGES.] It is well observed by Muretus—*Nulli
unquam, qui res ignorant, nomina, quibus eas exprime-
rent, quæsierunt.* Var. Lect. VI. 1.

P. 411—BUT WHAT WAS THEIR PHILOSOPHY?] The same Muretus has the following passage upon the ROMAN TASTE FOR PHILOSOPHY.—*Beati autem illi,
et opulenti, et omnium gentium victores ROMANI, in peten-
dis honoribus, et in prensandis civibus, et in exteris nationi-
bus verbo componendis, re compilandis occupati, philoso-
phandi curam servis aut libertis quis, et Græculis esurien-
tibus relinquebant. Ipsi, quod ab avaritia, quod ab am-*

bitione, quod e vogisitibus reliquum erat temporia, quia si partem aliquam aut ad audiendum Græcum quempiam philosophum, aut ad aliquem de philosophia libellum vel legendum vel scribendum contulissent, jam se ad crudelioris culmen pervenisse, jam viciam a se et profligatum jactere Græcum somniabant. Vat. Lect. VI. I.

I N D E X.

A.

- ADJECTIVE**, how it differs from other Attributives, such as the Verb and the Participle, 186. verbal, 187. pronominal, 189. strictly speaking can have no Genders 190
ADVERBS, their character and use, 192 to 194. Adverbs of Intension and Remission, 195. of Comparison, 196 to 199. of Time, and Place, and Motion, 204, 205. made out of Prepositions, 205. Adverbs of Interrogation, 206. affinity between these last, and the Pronoun relative, 206 to 208. Adverbs derived from every Part of Speech, 209, found in every Predicament, 210. called by the Stoics Πανδέκτης *ibid.* 419
MACHINES 419
ALEXANDER APHRODISIENSIS, 294, 310, 423. his Account of Phansy or Imagination 357
ALEXANDER and THAIS, 71. his influence upon the Greek Genius 419, 420
AMAFANIUS 412
AMMONIUS, his account of Speech, and its relations, 4. of the Progress of human Knowledge from Complex to Simple, 10. of the Soul's two principal Powers, 17. of the Species of Sentences, *ibid.* his notion of GOD, 55. quoted, 59. his notion of a Verb, 87, 193. his notion of Time, 100. illustrates from *Homer* the Species of Modes or Sentences; 145. quoted, 154. his notion of conjunctive Particles, and of the Unity which they produce, 241. quoted, 278. his account of Sound,

I N D E X.

Voice, Articulation, &c. 321, 328. of the distinction between a Symbol and a Resemblance, 331. what he thought the human Body with respect to the Soul, 334.	
his triple order of Ideas or Forms	382
<i>Analyse's and Synthesis</i> , 2, 3, 367. analysis of Cases	275,
	276, 285
ANAXAGORAS	269
ANTHOLOGIA Gr.	47, 50
ANTONINUS	183, 310, 405, 407, 416
APOLLONIUS , the Grammarians, explains the Species of Words by the Species of Letters, 27. his elegant name for the Noun and Verb, 33. quoted, 63. his idea of a Pronoun, 65, 67. quoted, 70. explains the Distinction and Relation between the Article and the Pronoun, 73, 74. his two Species of Δεῖξις or Indication, 77. holds a wide difference between the Prepositive and Subjunctive Articles, 78. explains the nature of the Subjunctive Article, 80. corrects Homer from the doctrine of Endiastics, 84, 85. his notion of that Tense called the <i>Præteritum perfectum</i> , 129. holds the Soul's disposition peculiarly explained by Verbs, 141. his notion of the Indicative Mode, 151. of the Future, implied in all Imperatives, 155. explains the power of those past Tenses, found in the Greek Imperatives, 156. his idea of the Infinitive, 165. his name for it, 166. quoted, 168, 175. his notion of middle Verbs, 176. quoted 179, 181, 195. explains the power and effect of the Greek Article, 217 to 222. holds it essential to the Pronoun not to coalesce with it, 225 to 228. shews the different force of the Article when differently placed in the same Sentence, 231. quoted, 238, 239. his idea of the Preposition	261

INDEX.

- A**PULEIUS, short account of him 415
AQUINAS, THOMAS, quoted 440
Argument, a priori & a posteriori, 9, 10. which of the two more natural to Man *ibid.*
ARISTOPHANES 420
ARISTOTLE, his notion of Truth, 3. quoted, 8. his notion of the difference between things absolutely prior, and relatively prior, 9, 10, quoted, 15. his Definition of a Sentence, 19, of a Word, 20. of Substance, 29. divides things into Substance and Accident, 30. how many Parts of Speech he admitted, and why, 32, 33, 34, &c. his notion of Genders, 42. his account of the metaphorical use of Sex, 48. quoted, 55, 56, 89. his Definition of a Verb, 96. his notion of a Now or Instant, 102. of Sensation limited to it, 104, 105, 431. of Time, 106, 107. of Time's dependence on the Soul, 112. quoted, 119, 193. his notion of Substance, 202. calls *Euripides* δ ποιητὴς, 223. himself called the *Stagirite*, why, *ibid.* a distinction of his, 224. his definition of a Conjunction, 239. a passage in his Rhetoric explained, 240. his account of Relatives, 286. his notion of the Divine Nature, 301. whom he thought it was probable the Gods should love, 302. his notion of Intellect and intelligible Objects, *ibid.* held Words founded in Compact, 314, 315. quoted, 310, 320. his account of the Elements or Letters, 324. his high notion of Principles, 325. quoted, 357, 379, 434. his notion of the difference between moveable and immoveable Existence, 360. between intellectual or divine Pleasure, and that which is subordinate, *ibid.* quoted 361. his notion of the divine Life or Existence, compared with that of Man, 362. of the difference between the *Greeks* and the

I N D E X.

- B**arbarians, 409. his character, as a Writer compassed with *Plato* and *Xenophon*, 421. corresponds with *Alexander* 419
Arithmetic, founded upon what Principles, 362. (See *Geometry*.) its subject, what, 367. owes its Being to the Mind, how *ibid.*
Art, what, and Artist, who 111, 352
ARTICLES, 81. their near alliance with Pronouns, 73. of two kinds, 814. the first kind, 814 to 832. the second kind, 833 to 836. *English Article*, their difference and use, 815. *Greek Article*, 819. Articles denote pre-aquaintance, 218, 230. thence eminence and notoriety, 882 to 884. with what words they associate, with what not, 884 to 889. *Greek Article* marks the Subject in Propositions, 830. Articles, instances of their effect, 831, 832. Articles pronominal, 72, 73, 233. instances of their effect, 835, 836, 847. Subjunctive Article, see *Pronoun* relative or subjunctive.
Articulation, see *Voice*
ASCONIUS 132
ATTRIBUTIVES, 30, 31. defined, 87. of the first order 87 to 191. of the second order, 192 to 211. See **VERB**, **PARTICIPLE**, **ADJECTIVE**, **ADVERB**.
AULUS GELLIUS, short account of him as a Writer 414

B.

- B**ACON, his notion of *Universal Grammar*, 2. of *antient Languages* and *Geniuses*, compared to *modern*, 288. of *mental Separation* or *Division*, 306. of *Symbols*, to convey our *Thoughts*, 384. of the *Analogy*

INDEX.

between the Gentiles of Nations and their Languages	407
<i>Being</i> or <i>Existence</i> , mutable, immutable, 90, 371. temporary, superior to Time, 91, 92. See <i>Truth</i> , <i>Gen.</i>	
BELLARIOUS	150
BLEMMIDES, NICEPHORUS, his notion of Time present, 119. his Etymology of 'Eternity', 368. his triple order of Forms or Ideas	386
Body, Instrument of the Mind, 305. chief Object of modern Philosophy, 308. confounded with Matter, 309. human, the Mind's veil, 333. Body, that, or Mind, which has precedence in different Systems	392, 393
BOERHAAVE	621
BoETHIUS, how many Parts of Speech he admitted as necessary to <i>Legis</i> , 33. his idea of GOD's Existence, 92, illustrates from <i>Virgil</i> the Species of Modes or Sentences, 146. quoted, 312. held Language founded in Compact, 315. refers to the Deity's unalterable Nature, 361. his notion of original, intelligible Ideas, 397. of the difference between Time (however immense) and Eternity, 389. short account of his Writings and character	416
Both differs from Two, how	227
BRUTUS	418, 419

C.

CÆSAR, C. JULIUS, his Laconic Epistle	178
CÆSAR, OCTAVIUS, influence of his Government upon the Roman Genius	419, 420
CALLIMACHUS	52
CASES, scarce any such thing in modern Languages, 278	

I N D E X.

name of, whence, 277. Nominative, 279 to 282. Accusative, 282, 283. Genitive and Dative, 284 to 287. Vocative, why omitted, 276. Ablative, peculiar to the <i>Romans</i> , and how they employed it	276, 277
<i>Causes</i> , Conjunctions connect the four Species of, with their effects, 248, final Cause, first in Speculation, but last in Event, <i>ibid.</i> has its peculiar Mode, 142. peculiar Conjunction, 248. peculiar Case	287
CHALCIDIUS , 301. short account of him	415
<i>Chance</i> , subsequent to Mind and Reason	434, 435
CHARISIUS, SOSIPATER	205, 210
CICERO , 132, 170, 269, 272, 311, 313, 407, compelled to allow the unfitness of the <i>Latin Tongue</i> for Philosophy, 411. one of the first that introduced it into the <i>Latin Language</i> , 412. Ciceronean and Socratic Periods	418
<i>City</i> , Feminine, why	48
CLARK, Dr. SAM.	128
COMPARISON , degrees of, 197 to 199. why Verbs admit it not, 200. why incompatible with certain Attributives, <i>ibid.</i> why with all Substantives	201
CONJUNCTION , 32, its Definition, 238. its two kinds 240, 241. Conjunctions Copulative, 242. Continutive, <i>ibid.</i> Suppositive, Positive, 244. Casual, Collective, 245, 246. Disjunctive Simple, 252. Adversative, <i>ibid.</i> Adversative absolute, 254. of Comparison, 255. Adequate, <i>ibid.</i> Inadequate, 256. Subdisjunctive, 258. Some Conjunctions have an obscure Signification, when taken alone	259
CONNECTIVE , 30, 31. its two kinds, 237. its first kind, <i>ibid.</i> to 260. its second, 261 to 274. See CONJUNCTION, PREPOSITION.	

I N D E X.

CONSENTIUS, his notion of the Neuter Gender, 43. of middle Verbs, 177. of the positive Degree	198
Consonant, what, and why so called ..	323
Contraries, pass into each other, 132. destructive of each other	251
Conversation, what	398
Conversion, of Attributives into Substantives, 38. of Substantives into Attributives, 182, 189. of Attributives into one another, 187. of Interrogatives into Relatives, and <i>vice versa</i> , 206, 207. of Connectives into Attributes	205, 272
CORN. NEPOS	212
Country, Feminine, why	48

D.

DAMASCIUS, his notion of Deity	441
Death, Masculine, why, 51. Brother to Sleep ..	52
Declension, the name, whence .. .	278
DEFINITIVE, 30, 31, 214. <i>See ARTICLES.</i>	
Definitions, what	367
Δεῖξις	64, 76
DEMOSTHENES	49, 419, 421
Derivatives more rationally formed than Primitives, why	336
Design, necessarily implies Mind	379, 434
DIogenes, the Cynic	419
DIogenes Laertius, 84, 145, 154, 317, 322, 324, 407	
DIONYSIUS of Halicarnassus	84, 35
Discrepancy, its importance to Nature, 250. heightens by degrees, and how	ibid. to 252
DONATUS	74, 272

I N D E X.

E.

<i>Earth</i> , Feminine, why	47
<i>ECCLESIASTICUS</i>	56
<i>Element</i> , defined, 324. primary Articulations or Letters so called, why, <i>ibid.</i> their extensive application, 325. See <i>Letters</i> .	
<i>Empiric</i> , who	352
<i>Enclitics</i> , among the Pronouns, their character	84, 85
<i>ENGLISH Tongue</i> , its rule as to Genders, 43. a peculiar privilege of, 58. expresses the power of contradistinctive and enclitic pronouns, 85. its poverty as to the expression of Modes and Tenses, 148. its analogy in the formation of Particles, 185, 186. neglected by illiterate Writers, <i>ibid.</i> force and power of its Articles, 215 to 233. shews the Predicate of the Proposition by position, as also the Accusative Case of the Sentence, 26, 274, 276. its character, as a Language ..	408
<i>EPICETUS</i>	310, 407
<i>Ἐπιστήμη</i> , its Etymology	368
<i>Ether</i> Masculine, why	46
<i>EUCLID</i> , a difference between him and <i>Virgil</i> , 69. his Theorems founded upon what	349
<i>EURIPIDES</i>	52, 310, 391
<i>Existence</i> differs from <i>Essence</i> , how ..	294, 433
<i>Experience</i> , founded on what	352
<i>Experiment</i> , its utility, 352. conducive to Art, how, <i>ibid.</i> beholden to Science, tho' Science not to that	353

F.

<i>Form</i> and <i>Matter</i> , 2, 7. elementary Principles, 807. mysteriously blended in their co-existence, <i>ibid.</i> and 812. <i>Form</i> , its original meaning, what, 310, trans-	
---	--

I N D E X.

ferred from lower things to the highest, 811. pre-existent, where, 812. described by Cicero, 311, 313, in Speech, what, 315, 326, 327, &c. Form of Forms, 312. triple order of Forms in Art, 374. in Nature, 377. intelligible or specific Forms, their peculiar character 364, 365, 372, 380, 396, 436; 438.	
<i>Fortune, Feminine, why</i>	57
FULLER	188

G.

GAZA THEODORE, his Definition of a Word, 21. explains the Persons in Pronouns, 67. hardly admits the Sub-junctive for an Article, 78. his account of the Tenses, 129. of Modes, 140. quoted, 151. calls the Infinitive the Verb's Noun, 165. quoted, 181. his definition of an Adverb, 195. arranges adverbs by classes according to the order of the Predicaments, 210. explains the power of the Article, 218. quoted; 225. explains the different powers of conjunctive Particles, 245. of disjunctive, 249. his singular explanation of a Verse in <i>Homer</i> , 253. quoted	262, 271
GEMISTUS, Georgius, otherwise Pletho, his doctrine of Ideas or Intelligible Forms	395
Genders, their origin, 41. their natural number, 42. (See Sex) why wanting to the first and second Pronoun 69	
Genus and Species, why they (but not individuals) admit of Number	39
Geometry, founded on what Principles, 352. that and Arithmetic independent on Experiment, <i>ibid.</i> (See Science.) its Subject, what, 367. beholden for it to the Mind, how	<i>ibid.</i>
God, expressed by Neuters, such as τὸ Θέον, <i>Numen</i> , &c.	

I N D E X.

why , 54, 55. as Masculine, <i>why</i> , <i>ibid.</i> immutable, and superior to Time and its distinctions, 92. allwise, and always wise, 301. immediate objects of his Wisdom, what , <i>ibid.</i> whom among men he may be supposed to love, 302. Form of Forms, sovereign Artist, 312, 313, 487. above all Intentions and Remissions, 162, 359, 439. his Existence different from that of Man, how, 360, 362. his divine Attributes, 361. his Existence necessarily infers that of Ideas or exemplary Forms, 379, 380, 436. exquisite Perfection of these divine Ideas or Forms, 380, 437. his stupendous view of all at once, 389, 390, 442. region of Truth, 162, 391, 403, 405. in him Knowledge and Power unite 440 Good , above all utility, and totally distinct from it, 297. sought by all men, 296, 298. considered by all as valuable for itself, <i>ibid.</i> intellectual, its character, 299. See <i>Science, God.</i>	
GORGIAS	52
<i>Grammar</i> , philosophical or universal, 2. how essential to other Arts, 6. how distinguished from other Grammars	11
<i>Grammarians</i> , error of, in naming Verbs Neuter, 177. In degrees of Comparison, 198. in the Syntax of Conjunctions	238
GREEKS , their character, as a Nation, 415, &c. <i>Asiatic Greeks</i> , different from the other <i>Greeks</i> , and why, 410. <i>Grecian Genius</i> , its maturity and decay 417, &c.	
GREEK Tongue , how perfect in the expression of Modes and Tenses, 147. force of its imperatives in the past Tenses, 156. wrong in ranging Interjections with Adverbs, 289. its character, as a Language 418, 423	
GROCIUS , his System of the Tenses	128

I N D E X.

H.

HERACLITUS, Saying of, 8. his System of things, what,	
	369, 370
HERMES, his Figure, Attributes, and Character, 324,	
325, 326. Authors who have writ of him	326
HESIOD, called ὁ ποιητής, the Poet, by Plato	223
HOADLY's Accidence	128
HOMER, 50, 52, 82, 84, 145, 149, 221, 223, 235, 253,	
	273, 285, 308, 417, 421
HORACE, 57, 80, 125, 142, 163, 169, 178, 199, 207,	
	232, 260, 413, 424, 425

I.

Ideas, of what, Words the Symbols, 341 to 347. if only	
particular were to exist, the consequence what, 337	
to 339. general, their importance, 341, 342. under-	
valued by whom, and why, 350. of what faculty the	
Objects, 360. their character, 362 to 366, 390. the	
only objects of Science and real Knowledge, why, 368.	
acquired, how, 353 to 374. derived, whence, 374, &c.	
their triple Order in Art, 376. the same in Nature, 381.	
essential to Mind, why, 379, 380. the first and highest	
Ideas, character of, 380, 440. Ideas, their different	
Sources, stated, 400. their real Source	434, 438
JEREMIAH	405
Imagination, what, 354. differs from Sense, how, 355.	
from Memory and Recollection, how	ibid.
Individuals, why so called, 39, 40. quit their character,	
how and why, 40, 41. their infinity, how expressed by	
a finite number of Words, 214 to 217, 234, 346. be-	
come objects of Knowledge, how	369
INSTANT. See Now.	

I N D E X.

Intellect. See *Mind*.

INTERJECTIONS, their application and effect, 289. no distinct Part of Speech with the <i>Greeks</i> , though with the <i>Latins</i> , 289. their character and description	290
Interrogation, its species explained and illustrated, 151 to 154. Interrogatives refuse the Article, why	228
JOHANNES GRAMMAT. See PHILOPONUS.	
ISOCRATES	421
JULIAN	416

K.

KUSTER	176
Knowledge, if any more excellent than Sensation, the consequence	371, 372

L.

LANGUAGE, how constituted, 327. defined, 329. founded in compact, 314, 327. (See *Speech*.) symbolic, not imitative, why, 332 to 355. impossible for it to express the real Essences of things, 335. its double capacity, why necessary, 348. its Matter, what, 349. its Form, what, *ibid*. its Precision and Permanence derived whence, 345. particular Languages, their Identity, whence, 374. their Diversity, whence, *ibid*. See *English*, *Greek*, *Latin*, *Oriental*.

LATIN Tongue, deficient in Aorists, and how it supplies the defect, 125. its peculiar use of the *Præteritum Perfectum*, 131. has recourse to Auxiliars for some Modes and Tenses, 148. to a Periphrasis for some Participles, 185. in what sense it has Articles, 233. the Ablative, a Case peculiar to it, 276. right in separating Interjections from the other parts of Speech, 289, 290. its

INDEX.

<i>character, as a Language,</i> 411. not made for Philosophy, <i>ibid.</i> 412. sunk with Boethius	416
<i>Letters, what Socrates thought of their Inventor,</i> 325. divine honours paid him by the <i>Egyptians</i> , <i>ibid.</i> See <i>Element.</i>	
<i>Liberty, its influence upon Men's Genius</i>	420
<i>Life, connected with Being</i>	300, 301, 432
<i>LINNEAUS</i>	44
<i>Literature, its cause, and that of Virtue, connected, how,</i> 407. antient, recommended to the Study of the liberal, 424. its peculiar effect with regard to a man's character	425, 426
<i>Logic, what</i>	3, 4
<i>LONGINUS, noble remark of</i>	420
<i>LUCIAN</i>	41
<i>LUCILIUS</i>	<i>ibid.</i>

M.

<i>MACROBIUS, short account of him,</i> 414. quoted, 127, 157, 168	
<i>Man, rational and social, 1, 2: his peculiar ornament,</i> what, 2. first or prior to Man, what, 9, 269: his Existence, the manner of, what, 359. how most likely to advance in happiness, 362. has within him something divine, 392. his Ideas, whence derived, 393 to 401. Medium, through which he derives them, what, 359, 393: his errors, whence, 406. to be corrected, how <i>ibid.</i>	
<i>Manuscripts quoted, of OLYMPIODORUS,</i> 371, 394, 395 of PHILONOTUS, 431, 433, 437: of Proclus, 434, 435, 438, 440: of DAMASCUS	441
<i>MARCIANUS CAPELLA, short account of him</i>	415
<i>Master Artist, what forms his character</i>	111

I N D E X.

<i>Matter joined with Form, 2, 7.</i> its original meaning, confounded by the Vulgar, how, 309. its extensive character according to antient Philosophy, 308. described by Cicero, 313. of Language, what, 315. described at large	316, &c.
MAXIMUS TYRIUS, his notion of the Supreme Intellect	162
<i>Memory and Recollection, what, 355.</i> distinguished from Imagination or Phansy, how	<i>ibid.</i>
Metaphor, its use	269
<i>Metaphysicians Modern, their Systems, what</i>	392
MILTON, 13, 14, 44, 45, 47, 49, 51, 53, 56, 59, 60, 112, 124, 147, 207, 267, 268, 404, 487	
<i>MIND (not Sense) recognizes time, 107 to 112.</i> universal, 162, 311, 312, 359. differs not (as Sense does) from the objects of its perception, 301. acts in Part through the body, in Part without it, 305. its high power of separation, 306, 366. penetrates into all things, 307. Νοῦς Ὑλικὸς, what, 310. Mind differs from Sense, how, 364, 365. The source of Union by viewing One in Many, 362 to 365. of Distinction by viewing Many in One, 366. without Ideas, resembles what, 380. region of Truth and Science, 371, 372. that or Body, which has precedence, 392, &c. Mind, human, how spontaneous and easy in its Energies, 361, 362. all Minds similar and congenial, why	395
MODES or Moods, whence derived, and to what end destined, 140. Declarative or Indicative, 141. Potential, 142. Subjunctive, 143. Interrogative, <i>ibid.</i> Inquisitive, <i>ibid.</i> Imperative, 144. Precreative or Optative, <i>ibid.</i> the several Species illustrated from <i>Homer, Virgil, and Milton, 145 to 147.</i> Infinitive Mode, its peculiar	

I N D E X.

character, 162, 163. how dignified by the <i>Stoicks</i> , 164.	
other Modes resolvable into it, 166. its application and coalescence, 167. Mode of Science, of Conjecture, of Proficiency, of Legislature, 168 to 170. Modes compared and distinguished, 149 to 160. <i>Greek Imperatives</i> of the Past explained and illustrated	156, 157
<i>Moon</i> , Feminine, why	45
<i>Motion</i> , and even its privation, necessarily imply Time	95
<i>MURETUS</i> , quoted, 441, 442. his notion of the <i>Romans</i>	<i>ibid.</i>
MUSONIUS RUFUS	416
N.	
<i>Names</i> , proper, what the consequence if no other words, 387 to 389. their use, 345. hardly parts of Language,	
346, 373	
NATHAN and DAVID	232
<i>Nature</i> , first to Nature, first to Man, how they differ, 9, 10, frugality of, 320. Natures subordinate subservient to the higher	359
NICEPHORUS . <i>See Blemmides</i> .	
NICOMACUS	437
<i>NOUN</i> , or Substantive, its three Sorts, 37. what Nouns susceptible of Number, and why, 39. only Part of Speech susceptible of Gender	41, 171
A Now or <i>INSTANT</i> , the bound of Time, but no part of it, 101. 102. analogous to a Point in a geometrical Line, <i>ibid.</i> its use with respect to Time, 104. its minute and transient Presence illustrated, 117. by this Presence Time made present, 116, 117, 118. <i>See Time, Place, Space.</i>	
<i>Number</i> , to what words it appertains, and why	39, 40

I N D E X.

O.

<i>Objectors</i> , ludicrous, 293; grave	294
<i>Ocean</i> , Masculine, why	49
<i>OLYMPIODORUS</i> , quoted from a Manuscript—his notion of Knowledge, and its degrees, 371, 372. of general Ideas, the Objects of Science	394, 395
<i>ONE</i> , by natural co-incidence, 162, 173, 192, 241, 262 to 265. by the help of external connectives	241, 265
<i>Oriental Languages</i> , number of their Parts of Speech, 35. their character and Genius	409
<i>ORPHEUS</i>	441
<i>OVID</i>	132, 141, 206

P.

<i>PARTICIPLE</i> , how different from the Verb, 94, 184. its essence or character, 184. how different from the Adjec- tive, 186. See <i>Attributive</i> , <i>LATIN</i> and <i>ENGLISH</i> <i>Tongues</i> .	
<i>Particulars</i> , how, though infinite, expressed by Words which are finite, 346. consequence of attaching ourselves wholly to them	351
<i>PAUSANIAS</i>	285
<i>Perception</i> and <i>Volition</i> , the Soul's leading Powers, 15; 17. Perception two-fold, 348. In Man what first, 9, 10, 353, 359. sensitive and intellective differ, how, 364, 365: if not correspondent to its objects, erroneous	371
<i>Period</i> . See <i>Sentence</i> .	
<i>PERIPATETIC Philosophy</i> , in the latter ages commonly united with the <i>Platonic</i> , 160. what species of Sentences it admitted, 144. its notion of Cases; 277. held words founded in Compact	314

I N D E X.

PERIZONIUS , his rational account of the Persons in Nouns and Pronouns	171
PESIUS , 76, 163, 372. short account of his character	413
<i>Persons</i> , first, second, third, their Origin and Use 65 to 67	
<i>Phansy</i> . See <i>Imagination</i> .	
PHILOBONUS , his notion of Time, 431. of the business of Wisdom or Philosophy, 433. of God, the Sovereign Artist	437
<i>Philosophy</i> , what would banish it out of the World, 293, 294. its proper business, what, 433. antient differs from modern, how, 308. modern its chief object, what <i>ibid.</i>	
<i>Philosophera</i> , antient, who not qualified to write or talk about them, 270. provided words for new Ideas, how 269	
<i>Philosophers</i> , modern, their notion of Ideas, 350. their employment, 351. their Criterion of Truth, <i>ibid.</i> deduce all from Body, 392. supply the place of occult Qualities, how	393
<i>Place</i> , mediate and immediate, 118. applied to illustrate the present Time, and the present Instant, <i>ibid.</i> its various relations denoted, how, 266, 271. its Latitude and Universality	266
PLATO , 21. how many parts of Speech he admitted, 32. his account of Genius and Species, 39. quoted, 92. his Style abounds with Particles, why, 259. new-coined Word of, 269. quoted, 325. in what he placed real happiness, 362. his two different and opposite Etymolo- gies of Ἐπισήμην, 369, 370. his Idea of Time, 369. quoted, 407. his character, as a writer, compared with <i>Xenophon</i> and <i>Aristotle</i>	422
PLETHO . See <i>GEMISTUS</i>	
PLINY , his account how the antient artists inscribed their names upon their works	186

I N D E X.

PLUTARCH	33
Poetry, what	5, 6
PORPHYRY	39
Position, its force in Syntax	26, 274, 276, 280	
PREPOSITIONS. 32. defined 261. their use, 265. their original Signification, 266. their subsequent and figurative, 268. their different application, 270, 271. force in Composition, 271, 272. change into Adverbs 272, 205		
Principles, to be estimated from their consequences, 7. 232, 236, 325. of Union and Diversity, their different ends and equal importance to the Universe, 250. (<i>See ONE, Union, Diversity.</i>) elementary Principles mysteriously blended, 307. their invention difficult, why, 325. those of Arithmetic and Geometry how simple 352		
PRISCIAN, defines a Word, 20. explains from Philosophy the Noun and Verb, 28, 33. quoted, 34. explains how Indication and Relation differ, 63. the nature of the Pronoun, 65. of pronominal Persons, 67. his reason why the two first Pronouns have no Gender, 70. why but one Pronoun of each sort, 71. ranges Articles with Pronouns according to the <i>Stoics</i> , 74. a pertinent observation of his, 88. explains the double Power of the <i>Latin Præteritum</i> , 125, 131. his doctrine concerning the Tenses, 130. defines Moods or Modes, 141. his notion of the Imperative, 155. of the Infinitive, 165, 166. of Verbs which naturally precede the infinitive, 168. of Impersonals, 175. of Verbs Neuter, 177. of the Participle, 194. of the Adverb, 195. of Comparatives, 202. quoted, 210. his reason why certain Pronouns coalesce not with the Article, 225, 226. explains the different powers of Connectives which conjoin, 243, 244, 245. of Connectives which disjoin, 250. quoted, 262.		

I N D E X.

his notion of the Interjection, 291. of Sound or Voice	316
PROCLUS, his Opinion about Rest, 95, 431. quoted, 310. explains the Source of the Doctrine of Ideas, 434, 435,	
	436, 438
Pronouns, why so called, 65. their Species or Persons, 65, 66. why the first and second have no Sex, 69, 70. resemble Articles, but how distinguished, 73. their coalescence, 74, 75. their importance in Language, 77. relative or subjunctive Pronoun, its nature and use, 78 to 83. those of the first and second person when expressed, when not, 83. Ἐγκλητικαὶ and ὁρονομέναι, how distinguished, 84. Primitives refuse the Article, why	
	225
PROTAGORAS, his notion of Genders, 42. a Sophism of his	144
Proverbs of Solomon	405
PUBLIUS SYRUS	124

Q.

QUINTILIAN	154, 233, 407
Qualities occult, what in modern Philosophy supplies their place	393

R.

Relatives, mutually infer each other, 251, 286. their usual Case, the Genitive	ibid.
Rhetoric, what	5, 6
ROMANS, their character as a Nation, 411. Roman Genius, its maturity and decay	418, &c.

I N D E X.

S.

- SALLUSTIUS PHILOSOPH.** 401
SANCTIUS, his elegant account of the different Arts respecting Speech, 5. quoted, 36, 163, 171. rejects Impersonals, 175. quoted, 202. his notion of the Conjunction, after *Scaliger*, 238. of the Interjection 291
SCALIGER, his Etymology of *Quis*, 82. his notion of Tenses from *Grotius*, 128. his elegant observation upon the order of the Tenses, 138. upon the pre-eminence of the Indicative Mode, 169. his account how the *Latinis* supply the place of Articles, 233. his notion of the Conjunction, 238. his subtle explication of its various powers, 242 to 247, 258. his reason from Philosophy why Substantives do not coalesce, 264. his origin of Prepositions, 266. his Etymology of *Scientia* 370
Science, 5. its Mode the Indicative, and Tense the Present, why, 159. its Conjunction the Collective, why, 246. defended, 295. valuable for its consequences, *ibid.* for itself, 296 to 303 (See *God.*) pure and speculative depends on Principles the most simple, 352. not beholden to Experiment, though Experiment to it, 353. whole of it seen in Composition and Division, 367. its Etymology, 369. residence of itself and its objects, where, 372. See *Mind*.
Scriptures, their Sublimity, whence 410
SENECA 47, 189, 414
Sensation, of the Present only, 105, 107, 199. none of Time, 105. each confined to its own Objects, 333, 369. its Objects infinite, 338, 355. Man's first Perception, *ibid.* consequence of attacking ourselves wholly to its

I N D E X.

Objects, 351. how prior to Intellection, 379. how subsequent	391
<i>Sentence</i> , definition of, 19, 20. its various Species investigated, 14, 15. illustrated from <i>Milton</i> , 147, &c. connection between Sentences and Modes	144
<i>Separation</i> , corporeal inferior to mental, why	306
<i>Servius</i>	132, 227, 432
<i>Sex</i> (See <i>Gender</i>) transferred in Language to Beings, that in Nature want it, and why, 44, 45. Substances alone susceptible of it	171
<i>SHAKSPARE</i>	12, 18, 23, 41, 47, 51, 53
<i>Ship</i> , Feminine, why	48
<i>SIMPLICIUS</i> , his triple Order of Ideas or Forms	381, 382
<i>SOPHOCLES</i>	432
<i>Soul</i> , its leading Powers	15, &c.
<i>Sound</i> , species of, 314, 317. the "Τλη, or Matter of Language, 315. defined, 316. See <i>Voice</i> .	
<i>Space</i> , how like, how unlike to Time, 100. See <i>Place</i> .	
<i>Speech</i> , peculiar Ornament of Man, 1, 2. how resolved or analysed, 2. its four principal Parts, and why these, and not others, 28 to 31. its Matter and Form taken together, 307 to 315. its Matter taken separately, 316 to 326. its Form taken separately, 327 to 359. necessity of Speech, whence, 382, 383. founded in Compact	
	314, 327
<i>SPENGER</i>	134, 164
<i>Spirits</i> , animal, subtle Ether, nervous Ducts, Vibrations, &c. their use in modern Philosophy. See <i>Qualities occult</i> .	
<i>Stoicks</i> , how many Parts of Speech they held, 34. ranged Articles along with Pronouns, 74. their account of the Tenses, 130. multiplied the number of Sentences;	

I N D E X.

144. allowed the name of Verb to the infinitive only, into which they supposed all other Modes resolvable, 164 to 166. their logical view of Verbs, and their Distinctions subsequent, 179 to 181. their notion of the Participle, 194. of the Adverb, 195. called the Adverb πανδέκτης, and why, 210. called the Preposition σύνδεσμος προθετικός, 261. invented new Words, and gave new significations to old ones, 289. their notion of Cases, 278. of the "Υλή, or Matter of Virtue, 309, 310. of Sound, 316. of the Species of Sound, 322. their Definition of an Element	324
Subject and Predicate, how distinguished in Greek, 280. how in English, <i>ibid.</i> analogous to what in nature 279	
Substance and Attribute, 29. the great Objects of natural Union, 264. Substance susceptible of Sex, 171, 41. of Number, 40. coincides not with Substance, 264. incapable of Intension, and therefore of Comparison	
	201, 202
SUBSTANTIVE, 30, 31. described, 37. primary, <i>ibid.</i> to 62. secondary, 63 to 67 (See NOUN, PRONOUN.)	
Substantive and Attributive, analogous in Nature to what	279
Στριβάμα Παρασύμβαμα, &c.	180
Sun, Masculine, why	45
Sylva, a peculiar Signification of	308, 309
Symbol, what, 330. differs from Imitation; how, <i>ibid.</i> preferred to it in constituting Language, why	332

T.

Tenses, their natural number, and why, 119, 120. Aorists, 128. Tenses either passing or compleative, what autho-	
--	--

I N D E X.

- rities for these distinctions, 128 to 130. *Præteritum perfectum* of the *Latins*, peculiar uses of, 131 to 134. *Imperfectum*, peculiar uses of, 135 to 137. order of Tenses in common Grammars not fortuitous .. 138
THERENCE 205, 206, 272
THE and A. See ARTICLE.
THEMISTIUS, 9. his notion how the Mind gains the idea of Time, 108. of the dependance of Time on the Soul's existence, 112. of the latest transition of Nature from one Genus to another 259, 432
THEODECTES 35
THEOPHEASTUS, his notion of Speech under its various Relations, 4. mentioned 419
THEUTA, inventor of Letters, 324. See HERMES.
TIBULLUS 76, 132, 133
Time, Masculine, why, 50. why implied in every Verb, 95, 96. gave rise to Tenses, *ibid.* its most obvious division, 97. how like, how unlike, to Space, 100 to 103. strictly speaking, no Time present, 105. in what sense it may be called present, 116; 117, 432. all Time divisible and extended, 118, 100, 101. no object of Sensation, why, 105. how faint and shadowy in existence, 106, 431. how, and by what power, we gain its idea, 107. Idea of the past, prior to that of the future, 109. that of the future, how acquired, 109, 110. how connected with Art and Prudence, 111. of what faculty, Time the proper Object, 112. how intimately connected with the Soul, *ibid.* order and value of its several Species, 113. what things exist in it, what not, 160 to 162. its natural effect on things existing in it, 161, 50. described by *Plato*, as the moving Picture of permanent

I N D E X.

Eternity, 269. this account explained by Boethius, <i>ibid.</i>	56
See Now or Instant.	
Truth, necessary, immutable, superior to all distinctions of present, past, and future, 99, 91, 92, 159, 160, 404, 405 (See Being, God.) its place or region, 162, 272; seen in Composition and Division, 3, 257, even negative, in some degree synthetical, 3, 250, 264. every Truth One, and so recognised, how, 264, 265. fictitious Truth	403

V.

VARRO	56, 61, 74, 413
VERB, 31. its more loose, as well as more strict acceptations, 87, 193. Verb, strictly so called, its character, 93, 94. distinguished from Participles, 94. from Adjectives, <i>ibid.</i> implies Time, why, 95. Tenses, 98, 119. Modes or Moods, 140, 170. Verbs, how susceptible of Number and Person, 170. Species of Verba, 173. active, 174. passive, <i>ibid.</i> middle, 175, 176, transitive, 177. neuter, <i>ibid.</i> inceptive, 126, 182. desiderative or mediative, 127. formed out of Substantives, 189, 188 (See Time, Tenses, MODES.) Impersonals rejected . . . 175	
Verbo Substantives, their pre-eminence, 88. essential to every Proposition, <i>ibid.</i> implied in every other Verb, 90, 98. denote existence, 88. vary, as varies the Existence, or Being, which they denote, 91, 92. See Being, Truth, God.	
Verses, logical	340
Vice, Feminine, why	56
VIRGIL, 46, 47, 48, 49, 57, 68, 83, 132. his peculiar	

I N D E X.

- method of coupling the passing and compleative Tenses, 183 to 188: quoted, 141, 182, 198; 199, 208, 255, 286, 287, 289, 401, 402. His idea of the Roman Genius 285, 412
- Virtue, Feminine, why, 55: moral and intellectual differ, how, 299, 300: its Matter, what, 309; 310: its Form, what, 311. connected with Literature, how 407
- "Yλη, 308. See Matter, Style.
- Understanding, its Etymology, 360: human understanding, a composite of what 425
- Union, natural, the great Objects of, 264, 279. perceived by what power, 363. in every Truth, whence derived 363
- Universe. See World.
- Voice, defined, 318. simple, produced how, 318, 319. differs from articulate, how, *ibid.* articulate, what, 319 to 324. articulate, species of, 321 to 323. See Vowel, Consonant, Element.
- Volition. See Perception.
- Vossius 35, 75, 290
- Vowel, what, and why so called 321, 322
- Utility, always and only sought by the sordid and illiberal, 294, 295, 298: yet could have no Being, were there not something beyond it, 297. See Good.

W.

- Whole and Parts 7
- Wisdom, how some Philosophers thought it distinguished from Wit 368, 433
- Words, defined, 20, 21, 328. the several Species of, 23 to 31. significant by themselves, significant by Relation,

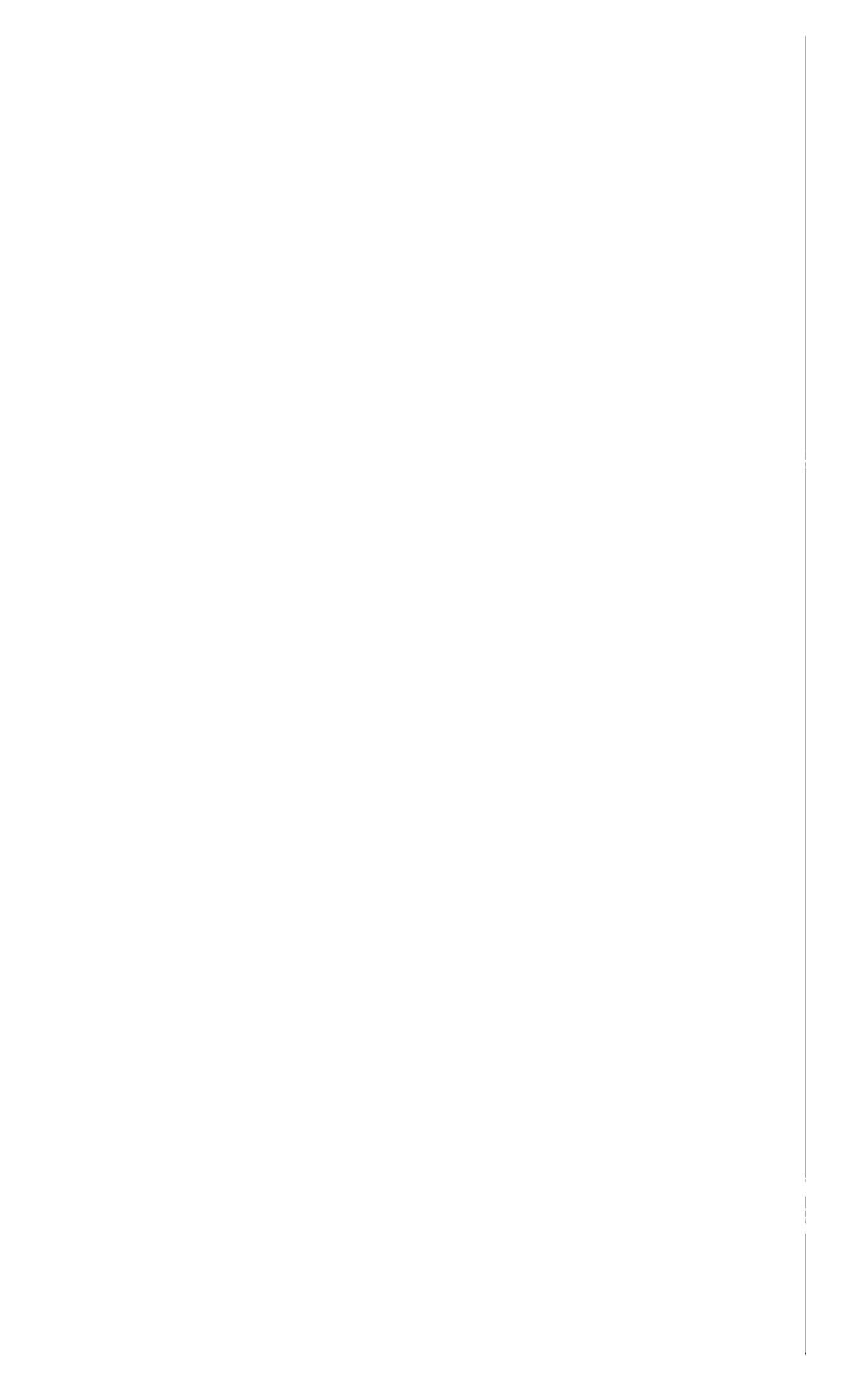
I N D E X.

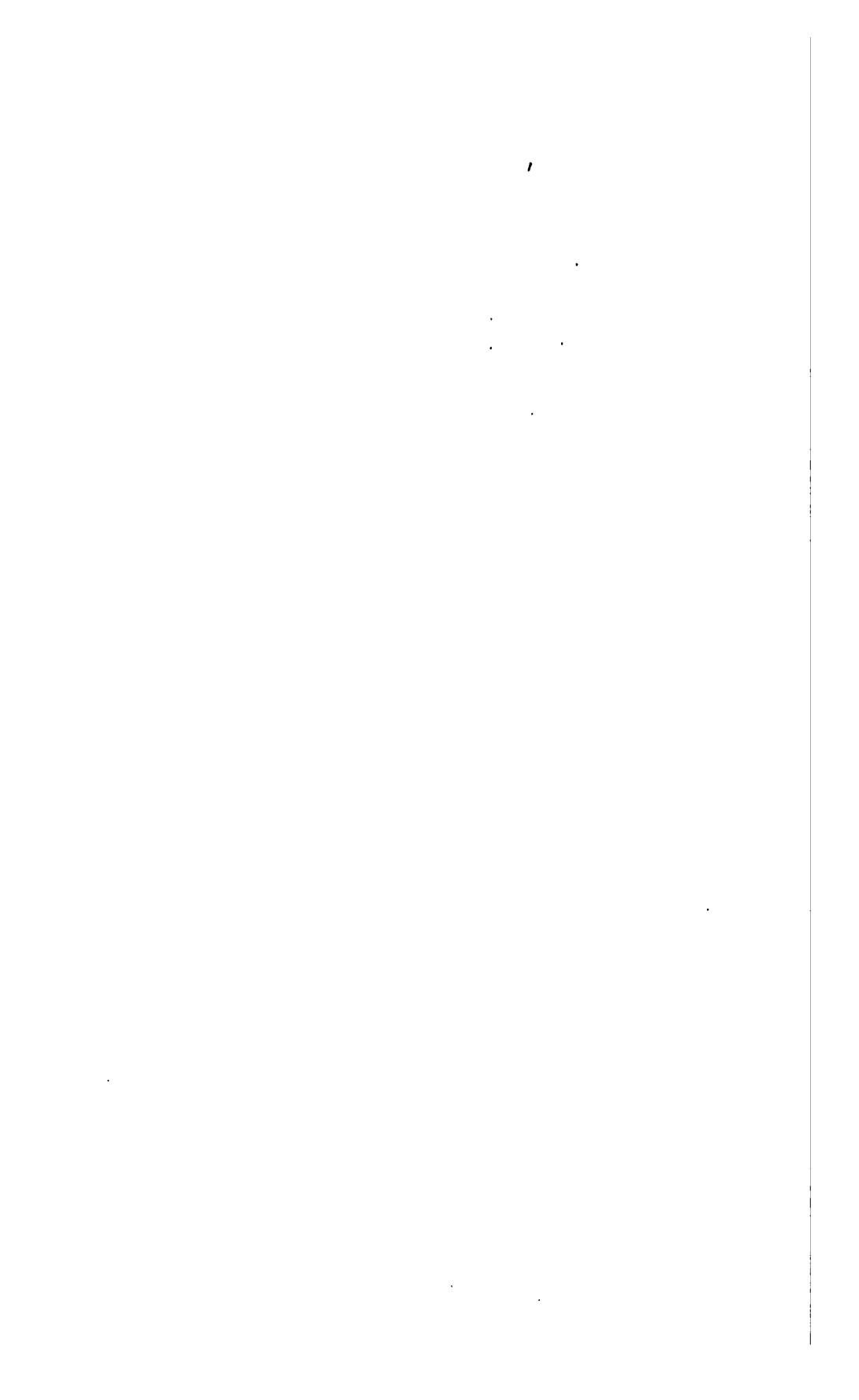
27. variable, invariable, 24. significant by themselves and alone, 37 to 211. by Relation and associated, 213 to 274. significant by Compact, 314, 327. Symbols, and not Imitations, 332. Symbols, of what not, 337 to 341. Symbols, of what, 341 to 349, 372. how, though in Number finite, able to express infinite Particulars 346, 372, 373
World, visible and external, the passing Picture of what, 383, 437. preserved one and the same, though ever changing, how, 384, 385. its Cause not void of Reason 436
Writers, ancient polite, differ from modern polite, in what and why 259, 260

X.

- XENOPHON*, 56, 407. his character, as a Writer, compared with *Plato* and *Aristotle* 422, 423

F I N I S.





This book should be returned to
the Library on or before the last date
stamped below.

A fine of five cents a day is incurred
by retaining it beyond the specified
time.

Please return promptly.

~~SEP 15 '60~~

~~DUE JUN 5 '60~~

~~NOV 11 '56 H~~

SEP 20 '61 H

JUN 5 '63 H

Widener Library

3 2044 100 154 566